# The homotopy fibre of the inclusion $F \_n(M) \longrightarrow \Pi \_1^{n} M$ for $M$ either $S^{2}$ or $R P^{2}$ and orbit configuration spaces 

Daciberg Lima Gonçalves, John Guaschi

## To cite this version:

Daciberg Lima Gonçalves, John Guaschi. The homotopy fibre of the inclusion $F \_n(M) \longrightarrow \Pi \_1^{n} M$ for $M$ either $S^{2}$ or $R P^{2}$ and orbit configuration spaces. 2017. hal-01627001

## HAL Id: hal-01627001 <br> https://hal.science/hal-01627001

Preprint submitted on 31 Oct 2017

HAL is a multi-disciplinary open access archive for the deposit and dissemination of scientific research documents, whether they are published or not. The documents may come from teaching and research institutions in France or abroad, or from public or private research centers.

L'archive ouverte pluridisciplinaire HAL, est destinée au dépôt et à la diffusion de documents scientifiques de niveau recherche, publiés ou non, émanant des établissements d'enseignement et de recherche français ou étrangers, des laboratoires publics ou privés.

# The homotopy fibre of the inclusion $F_{n}(M) \longleftrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} M$ for $M$ either $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ and orbit configuration spaces 

DACIBERG LIMA GONÇALVES<br>Departamento de Matemática - IME- Universidade de São Paulo Rua do Matão, 1010, CEP 05508-090 - São Paulo - SP - Brazil.<br>e-mail: dlgoncal@ime.usp.br

JOHN GUASCHI
Normandie Univ., UNICAEN, CNRS, Laboratoire de Mathématiques Nicolas Oresme UMR CNRS 6139, 14000 Caen, France.
e-mail: john.guaschi@unicaen.fr
$27^{\text {th }}$ September 2017


#### Abstract

Let $n \geq 1$, and let $\iota_{n}: F_{n}(M) \longrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} M$ be the natural inclusion of the $n^{\text {th }}$ configuration space of $M$ in the $n$-fold Cartesian product of $M$ with itself. In this paper, we study the map $\iota_{n}$, its homotopy fibre $I_{n}$, and the induced homomorphisms $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$ on the $k^{\text {th }}$ homotopy groups of $F_{n}(M)$ and $\prod_{1}^{n} M$ for $k \geq 1$ in the cases where $M$ is the 2 -sphere $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or the real projective plane $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. If $k \geq 2$, we show that the homomorphism $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$ is injective and diagonal, with the exception of the case $n=k=2$ and $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, where it is anti-diagonal. We then show that $I_{n}$ has the homotopy type of $K\left(R_{n-1}, 1\right) \times \Omega\left(\prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$, where $R_{n-1}$ is the $(n-1)^{\text {th }}$ Artin pure braid group if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, and is the fundamental group $G_{n-1}$ of the $(n-1)^{\text {th }}$ orbit configuration space of the open cylinder $\mathbb{S}^{2} \backslash\left\{\widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$ with respect to the action of the antipodal map of $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ if $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, where $\widetilde{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{S}^{2}$. This enables us to describe the long exact sequence in homotopy of the homotopy fibration $I_{n} \longrightarrow F_{n}(M) \xrightarrow{\iota_{n}} \prod_{1}^{n} M$ in geometric terms, and notably the boundary homomorphism $\pi_{k+1}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(I_{n}\right)$. From this, if $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ and $n \geq 2$, we show that $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# 1}\right)$ is isomorphic to the quotient of $G_{n-1}$ by its centre, as well as to an iterated semi-direct product of free groups with the subgroup of order 2 generated by the centre of $P_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ that is reminiscent of the combing operation for the Artin pure braid groups, as well as decompositions obtained in [GG5].


[^0]
## 1 Introduction

Let $M$ be a connected surface, perhaps with boundary, and either compact, or with a finite number of points removed from the interior of the surface, and let $\prod_{1}^{n} M=$ $M \times \cdots \times M$ denote the $n$-fold Cartesian product of $M$ with itself. The $n^{\text {th }}$ configuration space of $M$ is defined by:

$$
F_{n}(M)=\left\{\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \in \prod_{1}^{n} M \mid x_{i} \neq x_{j} \text { for all } 1 \leq i, j \leq n, i \neq j\right\}
$$

It is well known that the fundamental group $\pi_{1}\left(F_{n}(M)\right)$ of $F_{n}(M)$ is isomorphic to the pure braid group $P_{n}(M)$ of $M$ on $n$ strings [FaN, FoN], and if $M$ is the 2-disc then $P_{n}(M)$ is the Artin pure braid group $P_{n}$. Let $\iota_{n}: F_{n}(M) \longrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} M$ denote the inclusion map, and for $k \geq 0$, let $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}(M)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(\Pi_{1}^{n} M\right)$ be the induced homomorphism of the corresponding homotopy groups. If no confusion is possible, we shall often just write $\iota$ in place of $\iota_{n}$, and $\iota_{\#}$ or $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\#}$ if $k=1$. The homomorphism $\iota_{\#}: P_{n}(M) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right)$ was studied by Birman in 1969 [Bi], and if $M$ is a compact surface without boundary different from the 2 -sphere $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and the real projective plane $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, Goldberg showed that $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\iota_{\#}\right)$ is equal to the normal closure in $P_{n}(M)$ of the image of the homomorphism $j_{\#}: P_{n} \longrightarrow P_{n}(M)$ induced by the inclusion $j: \mathbb{D}^{2} \longrightarrow M$ of a topological disc $\mathbb{D}^{2}$ in $M$ [Go]. In [GG5], we extended this result to $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, and in the case of $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, we proved that $l_{\#}$ coincides with Abelianisation, so that $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\iota_{\#}\right)$ is equal to the commutator subgroup $\Gamma_{2}\left(P_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right)$ of $P_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$.

The aim of this paper is to study further the maps $\iota_{n}$ and the induced homomorphisms $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$ in more detail in the cases where $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, and to determine the homotopy type of the homotopy fibre of $t_{n}$. Following [A, pages 91 and 108], recall that if $f:\left(X, x_{0}\right) \longrightarrow\left(Y, y_{0}\right)$ is a map of (pointed) topological spaces and $I$ denotes the unit interval then the mapping path of $f$, defined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{f}=\left\{(x, \lambda) \in X \times Y^{I} \mid f(x)=\lambda(0)\right\} \tag{1}
\end{equation*}
$$

has the same homotopy type as $X$, the map $r_{f}: E_{f} \longrightarrow X$ given by $r_{f}(x, \lambda)=x$ being a homotopy equivalence, and the map $p_{f}: E_{f} \longrightarrow Y$ defined by $p_{f}(x, \lambda)=\lambda(1)$ is a fibration whose fibre is the homotopy fibre $I_{f}$ of $f$ defined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{f}=\left\{(x, \lambda) \in X \times Y^{I} \mid f(x)=\lambda(0) \text { and } \lambda(1)=y_{0}\right\} \tag{2}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will refer to the sequence of maps $I_{f} \longrightarrow X \xrightarrow{f} Y$ as the homotopy fibration of $f$, where the $\operatorname{map} I_{f} \longrightarrow X$ is the composition of the inclusion $I_{f} \longrightarrow E_{f}$ by $r_{f}$. More details may be found in [A, Ha, W]. In what follows, we denote the homotopy fibre of $\iota_{n}$ by $I_{n}$. We shall determine the homotopy type of $I_{n}$ in the cases where $M$ is either $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. This leads to a better understanding of the long exact sequence in homotopy of the fibration $p_{t_{n}}$, as well as an alternative interpretation of $P_{n}(M)$ in terms of exact sequences. Additional motivation for our study comes from the fact that the higher homotopy groups of $F_{n}(M)$ are known to be isomorphic to those of $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{S}^{3}$ (see Theorem 5), so such exact sequences involve these homotopy groups.

In the rest of this section, let $M$ be $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. This paper is organised as follows. In Section 2, we show in Lemma 7 that for all $n, k \geq 2$, the homomorphism $\left(l_{n}\right)_{\# k}$ is injective, and in Propositions 9 and 10, we prove that this homomorphism is diagonal, with the exception of the case $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $n=k=2$, where it is anti-diagonal. The aim of Section 3 is to prove Theorem 1 stated below that describes the homotopy type of $I_{n}$. In Section 3.1, we define the framework and much of the notation that will be used in the rest of the paper. In the case of $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, this description makes use of certain generalisations of configuration spaces, which we now define. Let $\widetilde{z}_{0} \in \mathbb{S}^{2}$, let $C=\mathbb{S}^{2} \backslash\left\{\widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$ denote the open cylinder, and let $\tau: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ denote the antipodal map defined by $\tau(x)=-x$ for all $x \in \mathbb{S}^{2}$ as well as its restriction to $C$. If $n \geq 1$, the $n^{\text {th }}$ orbit configuration space of $C$ with respect to the group $\langle\tau\rangle$, which is a subspace of $F_{n}(C)$, is defined by:

$$
F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)=\left\{\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \in \prod_{1}^{n} M \mid x_{i} \notin\left\{x_{j}, \tau\left(x_{j}\right)\right\} \text { for all } 1 \leq i, j \leq n, i \neq j\right\} .
$$

Orbit configuration spaces were defined and studied in [CX], but some examples already appeared in [Fa, FVB]. Let $G_{n}=\pi_{1}\left(F_{n}{ }^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)\right)$ denote the fundamental group of $F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$. In Lemma 16, we show that $F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ is a space of type $K\left(G_{n}, 1\right)$, and that $G_{n}$ may be written as an iterated semi-direct product of free groups similar to that of the Artin combing operation of $P_{n}$. We then have the following description of the homotopy fibre of $I_{L_{n}}$.

THEOREM 1. Let $n \geq 2$ and let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. Then the homotopy fibre $I_{n}$ of the map $\iota_{n}: F_{n}(M) \longrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} M$ has the homotopy type of:
(a) $F_{n-1}\left(\mathbb{D}^{2}\right) \times \Omega\left(\prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, or equivalently of $K\left(P_{n-1}, 1\right) \times \Omega\left(\prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$, where $\Omega\left(\prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ denotes the loop space of $\prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}$.
(b) $F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C) \times \Omega\left(\prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ if $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, or equivalently of $K\left(G_{n-1}, 1\right) \times \Omega\left(\prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$.

Theorem 1 will be proved in Section 3.2. The basic idea of the proof is to 'replace' $\iota_{n}$ by a map that is null homotopic and whose homotopy fibre has the same homotopy type as that of $t_{n}$. The fact that this map is null homotopic implies that its homotopy fibre may be written as a product that is the homotopy fibre $I_{c}$ of a constant map (see Remarks 14(b)). Another important tool is the relation between the homotopy fibres of fibre spaces and certain subspaces (see the Appendix, and Lemma 35 in particular). Taking the long exact sequence in homotopy of the homotopy fibration of $\iota_{n}$ and using the results of Section 2, we obtain the following exact sequences, where for $k \geq 1$, $\partial_{n, k}: \pi_{k}\left(\Pi_{1}^{n} M\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k-1}\left(I_{n}\right)$ denotes the boundary homomorphism on the level of $\pi_{k}$ associated to the homotopy fibration $I_{n} \longrightarrow F_{n}(M) \xrightarrow{\iota_{n}} \prod_{1}^{n} M$.

Corollary 2. Let $n \geq 2$, and let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$.
(a) Suppose that $k \geq 3$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $n=k=2$ ). Then we have the following split short exact sequence of Abelian groups:

$$
\begin{equation*}
1 \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}(M)\right) \xrightarrow{\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{k k}} \pi_{k}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right) \xrightarrow{\partial_{n, k}} \pi_{k-1}\left(\Omega\left(\prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow 1 \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the homomorphism $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$ is diagonal (resp. anti-diagonal). Up to isomorphism, this short exact sequence may also be written as:

$$
1 \longrightarrow \pi_{k}(M) \longrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} \pi_{k}(M) \longrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n-1} \pi_{k}(M) \longrightarrow 1
$$

(b) Suppose that $k=2$, and that $n \geq 3$ if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$. Then we have the following exact sequence:

$$
\begin{equation*}
1 \longrightarrow \pi_{2}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right) \xrightarrow{\partial_{n, 2}} R_{n-1} \times \pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow P_{n}(M) \xrightarrow{\left(\iota_{n} \#_{1}\right.} \pi_{1}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right) \longrightarrow 1, \tag{4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $R_{n-1}=P_{n-1}$ if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $R_{n-1}=G_{n-1}$ if $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, which up to isomorphism, may also be written as:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 1 \longrightarrow \mathbb{Z}^{n} \longrightarrow P_{n-1} \oplus \mathbb{Z}^{n-1} \longrightarrow P_{n}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right) \longrightarrow 1 \quad \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2} \\
& 1 \longrightarrow \mathbb{Z}^{n} \longrightarrow G_{n-1} \times \mathbb{Z}^{n-1} \longrightarrow P_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right) \xrightarrow{\left(\iota_{n}\right) \neq 1} \mathbb{Z}_{2}^{n} \longrightarrow 1 \quad \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

In the case $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, the short exact sequence does not split.
The homomorphisms that appear in the exact sequences of Corollary 2 can be made explicit. In order to understand better the homotopy fibration associated to $l_{n}$ and these exact sequences, it is helpful to study the properties of $F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ and $G_{n}$, as well as the boundary homomorphism $\partial_{n, k}$, the case $k=2$ being the most complicated due to the appearance of $G_{n-1}$ in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right)$. In Section 4, we analyse $G_{n}$. In Proposition 19, we give a presentation, from which we deduce in Proposition 20 that the centre of $G_{n}$ is infinite cyclic, generated by an element $\Theta_{n}$ similar in nature to the full-twist braid of $P_{n}(M)$.

If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ), let $n_{0}=3$ (resp. $n_{0}=2$ ). In Section 5 , we determine completely the boundary homomorphism $\partial_{n, 2}$, that we will denote simply by $\partial_{n}$. One of the principal difficulties here is to describe concrete homotopy equivalences between $I_{n}$ and the product spaces $I_{c}$ that appear in the statement of Theorem 1 and which are homotopy fibres of constant maps. We first introduce geometric representatives of generators of $\pi_{1}(\Omega(M))$ in Section 5.1, and we use them both to describe certain elements of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$ in Lemma 24, and also to fix a basis $\mathcal{B}=\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}}, \ldots, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}}, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\tilde{z}_{0}}, \widetilde{\lambda}_{-\tilde{z}_{0}}\right)$ (resp. $\left.\mathcal{B}=\left(\lambda_{x_{0}}, \lambda_{x_{1}}, \ldots, \lambda_{x_{n-2}}, \lambda_{z_{0}}\right)\right)$ of $\pi_{2}\left(\Pi_{1}^{n} M\right)$ in equation (48). Here, $\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{x}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{x}_{n-2}, \widetilde{z}_{0}$ are certain basepoints of $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ that are defined in Section 3.1, and $x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, z_{0}$ are their projections in $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ under the universal covering map from $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ to $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. In equation (49), for each element $\widetilde{\lambda}_{y}$ (resp. $\lambda_{y}$ ) of $\mathcal{B}$, we define the element $\widetilde{\delta}_{y}$ (resp. $\delta_{y}$ ) to be its image in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right)$ under $\partial_{n}$. In Section 5.2, in Lemma 26, we construct explicit homotopy equivalences between the intermediate homotopy fibres that were introduced in Section 3.1 whose composition yields a homotopy equivalence between $I_{c}$ and $I_{n}$. Here we also require Corollary 37 that is proved in the Appendix. In Proposition 27, we introduce an element $\widehat{\tau}_{n}$ of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right)$ that under the projection from $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right)$ to $P_{n}(M)$, is sent to the full-twist braid $\Delta_{n}^{2}$ of $P_{n}(M)$, and we relate $\widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2}$ to the elements of the set $\partial_{n}(\mathcal{B})$. In Section 5.3, we describe $\partial_{n}$ in the case $n=n_{0}$, the main results being Theorem 29 and Corollary 30. The proof of Theorem 29 is geometric in nature, and makes use of Lemma 31 that is also used later on in the paper. The analysis of $\partial_{n}$ when $n>n_{0}$ is
carried out in Section 5.4. The basic idea is to consider the possible projections of $I_{n}$ onto $I_{n_{0}}$. However, need to take care with the basepoints here, and we bring in to play various homeomorphisms ensure that they coincide with those of a standard copy of $I_{n_{0}}$ as studied in Section 5.3. The main result of Section 5.4 is the following.
THEOREM 3. In $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right)$, we have:

$$
\widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2}= \begin{cases}\partial_{n}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}+\cdots+\tilde{\lambda}_{\tilde{x}_{n-3}}+\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}-\tilde{\lambda}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right) & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2} \\ \partial_{n}\left(\lambda_{x_{0}}+\cdots+\lambda_{x_{n-2}}+\lambda_{z_{0}}\right) & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}\end{cases}
$$

From this, we obtain Corollary 33 that describes $\partial_{n}$ completely, and that generalises Corollary 30. This enables us to reprove several isomorphisms involving $P_{n}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$, and to build upon the description of $\Gamma_{2}\left(P_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right)$ given in [GG5].
Proposition 4. Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, and let $n \geq n_{0}$.
(a) If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ then there are isomorphisms:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# 1}\right)=P_{n}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right) \cong P_{n-1} /\left\langle\Delta_{n-1}^{4}\right\rangle \cong \mathbb{F}_{n-2} \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{n-3} \rtimes\left(\cdots \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{3} \rtimes \mathbb{F}_{2}\right) \cdots\right)\right) \times \mathbb{Z}_{2} \tag{5}
\end{equation*}
$$

(b) If $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ then there are isomorphisms:
$\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# 1}\right)=\Gamma_{2}\left(P_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right) \cong G_{n-1} /\left\langle\Theta_{n-1}^{2}\right\rangle \cong \mathbb{F}_{2 n-3} \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{2 n-5} \rtimes\left(\cdots \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{5} \rtimes \mathbb{F}_{3}\right) \cdots\right)\right) \times \mathbb{Z}_{2}$.
In each case, the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-factor corresponds to the subgroup $\left\langle\Delta_{n}^{2}\right\rangle$ of $P_{n}(M)$.
The result of part (a) is in agreement with [GG5, equation (2)].
Finally, in an Appendix, we prove Proposition 36 that relates the homotopy fibres of fibre spaces and certain subspaces, and that implies that one of the maps that appears in the between $I_{c}$ and $I_{n}$ is indeed a homotopy equivalence. This result seems to be well known to the experts, but we were not able to find a proof in the literature.

Some of the results and constructions of this paper have since been generalised in [GGG]. More precisely, if $X$ is a topological manifold without boundary of dimension at least three, under certain conditions, the homotopy type of the homotopy fibre of the inclusion map $\iota_{n}: F_{n}(X) \longrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} X$ was determined, and was used to study the cases where either the universal covering of $X$ is contractible, or $X$ is an orbit space $\mathbb{S}^{k} / G$ of a tame, free action of a Lie group $G$ on the $k$-sphere $\mathbb{S}^{k}$. A complete description of the long exact sequence in homotopy of the homotopy fibration of $t_{n}$, similar to that of Corollary 2 , was given in the case $X=\mathbb{S}^{k} / G$, where the group $G$ is finite and $k$ is odd. The authors have also written a survey that summarises the current situation, and that includes some questions and open problems about graph and (orbit) configuration spaces [GG6].

## Acknowledgements

The authors are grateful to Michael Crabb for his help with the results of the Appendix, and especially for proposing proofs of Lemma 35 and Proposition 36. This work on this paper started in 2013 initially as part of the paper [GG5]. The authors were partially supported by the FAPESP Projeto Temático Topologia Algébrica, Geométrica 2012/24454-8 (Brazil), by the Réseau Franco-Brésilien en Mathématiques, by the CNRS/FAPESP project $n^{\circ} 226555$ (France) and $n^{\circ}$ 2014/50131-7 (Brazil), and the CNRS/FAPESP PRC project ${ }^{\circ} 275209$ (France) and $n^{\circ}$ 2016/50354-1 (Brazil).

## 2 Properties of $\iota_{n}$ and $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$

In this section, we determine some properties of $\iota_{n}$ and of $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$, where $k \in \mathbb{N}$. If $X$ and $Y$ are topological spaces, and $f, g: X \longrightarrow Y$ are maps between $X$ and $Y$, we write $f \simeq g$ if $f$ and $g$ are homotopic, and we denote the homotopy class of $f$ by $[f]$.

We first state the following description of the homotopy type of the universal covering of the configuration spaces of $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$.

THEOREM 5 ([BCP, FZ], [GG3, Proposition $10(\mathrm{~b})]$ ). Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, and let $n \in \mathbb{N}$. Then the universal covering $\widetilde{F_{n}(M)}$ of $F_{n}(M)$ has the homotopy type of $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $n \leq 2$ or if $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ and $n=1$, and has the homotopy type of the 3 -sphere $\mathbb{S}^{3}$ otherwise.

REMARK 6. If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ), then by [FVB, Corollary, page 244] (resp. [VB, Corollary, page 82]), $\pi_{2}\left(F_{n}(M)\right)$ is trivial for all $n \geq 3$ (resp. $n \geq 2$ ).

Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ and let $n \geq 2$. For $i \in\{1, \ldots, n\}$, let $p_{i}: F_{n}(M) \longrightarrow M$ and $\widetilde{p}_{i}: \prod_{1}^{n} M \longrightarrow M$ denote the respective projections onto the $i^{\text {th }}$ coordinate. If $1 \leq i<$ $j \leq n$, let $\alpha_{i, j}: F_{n}(M) \longrightarrow F_{2}(M)$ and $\widetilde{\alpha}_{i, j}: \prod_{1}^{n} M \longrightarrow \prod_{1}^{2} M$ denote the respective projections onto the $i^{\text {th }}$ and $j^{\text {th }}$ coordinates. Observe that the maps $p_{i}, \widetilde{p}_{i}, \alpha_{i, j}$ and $\widetilde{\alpha}_{i, j}$ are fibrations, and that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{i}=\widetilde{p}_{i} \circ \iota_{n} \text { and } \iota_{2} \circ \alpha_{i, j}=\widetilde{\alpha}_{i, j} \circ \iota_{n} . \tag{7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $1 \leq i<j \leq n$. As maps from $F_{n}(M)$ to $M$, we have $\widetilde{p}_{i} \circ \iota_{n}=p_{1} \circ \alpha_{i, j}$ and $\widetilde{p}_{j} \circ \iota_{n}=$ $\widetilde{p}_{2} \circ \iota_{2} \circ \alpha_{i, j}$, and using (7), we obtain the following commutative diagram:


In all of what follows, let $\tau: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ denote the antipodal map defined by $\tau(x)=-x$ for all $x \in \mathbb{S}^{2}$, and let $\pi: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ denote the universal covering.

Lemma 7. Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, and let $n \geq 2$.
(a) Let $1 \leq i \leq n$. If either $k \geq 3$, or $k=n=2$ and $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, the homomorphism $\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}(M)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}(M)$ is an isomorphism.
(b) Let $k \geq 2$. Then the homomorphism $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}(M)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right)$ is injective.

REMARK 8. Let $n$ and $k$ be as in Lemma 7(a). Theorem 5 implies that $\pi_{k}\left(F_{n}(M)\right) \cong$ $\pi_{k}(M)$, and the lemma provides an explicit isomorphism.

Proof of Lemma 7. Let $n, k \geq 2$.
(a) Let $1 \leq i \leq n$. Then $p_{i}: F_{n}(M) \longrightarrow M$ is a Fadell-Neuwirth fibration whose fibre, which is an Eilenberg-Mac Lane space of type $K(\pi, 1)$, may be identified with $F_{n-1}(M \backslash$ $\left.\left\{x_{i}\right\}\right)$. The result follows by taking the long exact sequence in homotopy of this fibration (note that the fibre is contractible if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $n=2$ ).
(b) If $k \geq 3$, or $k=n=2$ and $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ then the statement is a consequence of part (a) and (7). So assume that $k=2$ and that $n \neq 2$ if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$. The result is a consequence of Remark 6.

As we shall now see, the homomorphism $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}(M)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(\Pi_{1}^{n} M\right)$ is diagonal for most values of $n$ and $k$, with the exception of one case when it is anti-diagonal.

Proposition 9. Let $n, k \geq 2$.
(a) If $n=k=2$ then the homomorphism $\left(\iota_{2}\right)_{\# 2}: \pi_{2}\left(F_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{2}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{2} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ is the antidiagonal homomorphism that sends a generator of $\pi_{2}\left(F_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right)$ to $(1,-1)$ or to $(-1,1)$ depending on the choice of orientation of $\mathbb{S}^{2}$.
(b) If $n \geq 2$ and $k \geq 3$ then $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ is a diagonal homomorphism.

Proof. Let $n=k=2$ (resp. $n \geq 2$ and $k \geq 3$ ). In part (a) (resp. (b)), we shall show that $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(\Pi_{1}^{n} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ is an anti-diagonal (resp. diagonal) homomorphism. To do so, it suffices to prove that $\left(\widetilde{p}_{1}\right)_{\# 2} \circ\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# 2}=-\left(\widetilde{p}_{2}\right)_{\# 2} \circ\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# 2}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left(\widetilde{p}_{i}\right)_{\# k} \circ\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}=$ $\left(\widetilde{p}_{j}\right)_{\# k} \circ\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$ for all $\left.1 \leq i<j \leq n\right)$, which is equivalent to showing that $\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# 2}=$ $-\left(p_{2}\right)_{\# 2}\left(\operatorname{resp} .\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# k}=\left(p_{j}\right)_{\# k}\right)$.
(a) Suppose that $n=k=2$. Thus $\pi_{2}\left(F_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right) \cong \pi_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}$, and for $i=1,2, p_{i}$ is a homotopy equivalence, with homotopy inverse $s_{i}: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow F_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$, where $s_{1}(x)=$ $(x,-x)$ and $s_{2}(x)=(-x, x)$ [GG4, page 859]. Since $p_{1} \circ s_{1}=\operatorname{Id}_{\mathbb{S}^{2}}$ and $p_{2} \circ s_{1}=\tau$, we have $\left(s_{1}\right)_{\# 2}=\left(\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# 2}\right)^{-1},\left(p_{2}\right)_{\# 2} \circ\left(\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# 2}\right)^{-1}=\tau_{\# 2}$, and $\left(p_{2}\right)_{\# 2}=\tau_{\# 2} \circ\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# 2}=-\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# 2}$ since $\tau$ is of degree -1 . Now $\pi_{2}\left(F_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right) \cong \pi_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}$, and once we have fixed an orientation of $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and a generator of $\pi_{2}\left(F_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right),\left(\iota_{2}\right)_{\# 2}$ sends this generator to $(1,-1)$ or to $(-1,1)$ using (7) and Lemma 7(a).
(b) Let $k \geq 3$. To compare the homomorphisms $\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$, where $i \in\{1, \ldots, n\}$, we analyse the elements $\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# k}([\alpha])$ of $\pi_{k}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ for maps $\alpha: \mathbb{S}^{k} \longrightarrow F_{n}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$. We split the proof into two cases.
(i) First suppose that $n=2$. Let $\beta=p_{1} \circ \alpha$, and let $s_{1}$ be as in the proof of (a). Then $s_{1} \circ \beta=s_{1} \circ p_{1} \circ \alpha \simeq \alpha$. Since $\beta$ is a map from $\mathbb{S}^{k}$ to $\mathbb{S}^{2}$, it follows from the long exact sequence in homotopy of the Hopf fibration $\mathbb{S}^{1} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{3} \xrightarrow{H} \mathbb{S}^{2}$ that $\beta$ factors through the Hopf map $H: \mathbb{S}^{3} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$, and so there exists $\beta_{1}: \mathbb{S}^{k} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{3}$ such that $\beta=H \circ \beta_{1}$. We thus have the following diagram:

that is commutative, with the exception of the paths involving $s_{1}$ that are commutative up to homotopy. Using the homotopy equivalences of part (a), for $i=1,2$, we have:

$$
p_{i} \circ \alpha \simeq p_{i} \circ s_{1} \circ \beta=p_{i} \circ s_{1} \circ H \circ \beta_{1} \simeq \tau^{i-1} \circ H \circ \beta_{1} .
$$

But by a result of Hopf (see [A, page 269, Lemma 8.2.5] or [Ho, Satz II and $\mathrm{IIb}^{\prime}$ ]), $\tau \circ H \simeq H$, and so $p_{1} \circ \alpha=\beta \simeq p_{2} \circ \alpha$. Thus $\left(p_{1} \circ \alpha\right)_{\# k}=\left(p_{2} \circ \alpha\right)_{\# k}$ for all maps $\alpha: \mathbb{S}^{k} \longrightarrow F_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$, hence $\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# k}=\left(p_{2}\right)_{\# k}$, from which we conclude that $\left(\iota_{2}\right)_{\# k}$ is a diagonal homomorphism.
(ii) Now suppose that $n \geq 3$. To prove that $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$ is diagonal, it suffices to show that the homotopy class $\left[p_{i} \circ \alpha\right]$ in $\pi_{k}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ of the map $p_{i} \circ \alpha: \mathbb{S}^{k} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ does not depend on $i$, or equivalently that $\left[p_{j} \circ \alpha\right]=\left[p_{1} \circ \alpha\right]$ in $\pi_{k}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ for all $2 \leq j \leq n$. As we saw in the previous paragraph, $\left(\iota_{2}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{2} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ is a diagonal homomorphism, in particular, $\left(\widetilde{p}_{1} \circ \iota_{2}\right)_{\# k}=\left(\widetilde{p}_{2} \circ \iota_{2}\right)_{\# k}$. Using this and taking $i=1$ and $2 \leq j \leq n$ in the commutative diagram (8), for any map $\alpha: \mathbb{S}^{k} \longrightarrow F_{n}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$, we have:

$$
\left[p_{1} \circ \alpha\right]=\left[\widetilde{p}_{1} \circ \iota_{2} \circ \alpha_{1, j} \circ \alpha\right]=\left[\widetilde{p}_{2} \circ \iota_{2} \circ \alpha_{1, j} \circ \alpha\right]=\left[p_{j} \circ \alpha\right],
$$

and thus $\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# k}=\left(p_{j}\right)_{\# k}$ as required.
The following proposition is the analogue of Proposition 9 for $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$.
PROPOSITION 10. Let $n, k \geq 2$. Then $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(\Pi_{1}^{n} \mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ is a diagonal homomorphism.

REMARK 11. Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ). In the cases not covered by Lemma 7(a), namely $k=2$ and $n \geq 3$ (resp. $n \geq 2$ ), $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# 2}: \pi_{2}\left(F_{n}(M)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{2}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right)$ is trivially diagonal by Remark 6, but the homomorphism $\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# k}$ of Lemma 7(a) is not an isomorphism.

Proof of Proposition 10. Let $k, n \geq 2$. We consider four cases.
(a) If $k=2$ then $\pi_{2}\left(F_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right)=1$ by Remark 6, and hence $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# 2}$ is the trivial (diagonal) homomorphism.
(b) Let $n=2$ and $k=3$. By (7), it suffices to show that $\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# 3}=\left(p_{2}\right)_{\# 3}$. With Theorem 5 in mind, let $\gamma$ (resp. $\rho$ ) denote a generator of the infinite cyclic group $\pi_{3}\left(F_{3}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right.$ ) (resp. $\pi_{3}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ ). By Lemma $7(\mathrm{a}),\left(p_{l}\right)_{\# 3}: \pi_{3}\left(F_{3}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{3}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ is an isomorphism for all $1 \leq l \leq 3$, so there exists $\varepsilon_{l} \in\{1,-1\}$ such that $\left(p_{l}\right)_{\# 3}(\gamma)=\varepsilon_{l} \rho$. Hence there exist $1 \leq i<j \leq 3$ and $\varepsilon \in\{1,-1\}$ such that $\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# 3}(\gamma)=\left(p_{j}\right)_{\# 3}(\gamma)=\varepsilon \rho$. Consider (8), where we take $n=3$. The map $\alpha_{i, j}$ is a Fadell-Neuwirth fibration, whose fibre may be identified with $F_{1}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2} \backslash\left\{x_{i}, x_{j}\right\}\right)$, and as in the proof of Lemma 7(a), we see that $\left(\alpha_{i, j}\right)_{\# 3}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{3}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right)$ is an isomorphism, thus $\gamma^{\prime}=\left(\alpha_{i, j}\right)_{\# 3}(\gamma)$ is a generator of the infinite cyclic group $\pi_{3}\left(F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right)$. Taking the commutative diagram (8) on the level on $\pi_{3}$, we see that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \varepsilon \rho=\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# 3}(\gamma)=\left(p_{1} \circ \alpha_{i, j}\right)_{\# 3}(\gamma)=\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# 3}\left(\gamma^{\prime}\right) \text { and } \\
& \varepsilon \rho=\left(p_{j}\right)_{\# 3}(\gamma)=\left(p_{2} \circ \alpha_{i, j}\right)_{\# 3}(\gamma)=\left(p_{2}\right)_{\# 3}\left(\gamma^{\prime}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

from which it follows that $\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# 3}=\left(p_{2}\right)_{\# 3}$ as required.
(c) Suppose that $n=2$ and $k \geq 4$. Let $h: \widetilde{F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)} \longrightarrow F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ be the universal covering map, and with Theorem 5 in mind, let $f: \mathbb{S}^{3} \longrightarrow F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ and $g: \overline{F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{3}$ be homotopy equivalences. If $i \in\{1,2\}$ then $p_{i} \circ h \circ f: \mathbb{S}^{3} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ lifts to a map
$\widehat{p}_{i}: \mathbb{S}^{3} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$, and we have the following commutative diagram:


From Lemma 7(a) and the proof of case (b) above, $\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ is an isomorphism and $\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# 3}\left(\gamma^{\prime}\right)=\varepsilon \rho$. Considering the commutative diagram (9) on the level of $\pi_{3},(h \circ f)_{\# 3}$ and $\pi_{\# 3}$ are also isomorphisms, and it follows that $\left(\widehat{p}_{i}\right)_{\# 3}=$ $\left(\pi_{\# 3}\right)^{-1} \circ\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# 3} \circ(h \circ f)_{\# 3}$ is an isomorphism that is independent of $i$. Hence $\widehat{p}_{i}$ is homotopic to the Hopf map $H$, and on the level of $\pi_{k}$, we have $\left(p_{i}\right)_{\# k}=\pi_{\# k} \circ H_{\# k} \circ((h \circ$ $\left.f)_{\# k}\right)^{-1}$ for all $k \geq 3$. We conclude that $\left(p_{1}\right)_{\# k}=\left(p_{2}\right)_{\# k}$ as required.
(d) Finally, if $n, k \geq 3$, it suffices to replace $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ by $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ in case (b)(ii) of the proof of Proposition 9, and to make use of the fact proved in cases (b) and (c), that for $n=2$ and all $k \geq 3,\left(\iota_{2}\right)_{\# k}$ is a diagonal homomorphism.

Remark 12. To prove the result of Proposition 10 in the case $n=2$ and $k=3$, one may make use of [DG, Proposition 2.13] or [K, Theorem 1.17] to show that the pair of maps $(\pi \circ H, \pi \circ H): \mathbb{S}^{3} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2} \times \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ may be deformed to a pair of coincidence-free maps, and so up to homotopy, factors through $F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$.

## 3 The homotopy type of the homotopy fibre of $t_{n}$ for $M=$ $\mathbb{S}^{2}, \mathbb{R} P^{2}$

The aim of this section is to prove Theorem 1 concerning the homotopy type of the homotopy fibre of the $\operatorname{map} \iota_{n}: F_{n}(M) \longrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} M$, where $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. In Section 3.1, we define much of the basic notation that will be used in the rest of the paper, and we advise the reader to refer to this section frequently during the rest of the manuscript. In Section 3.2, we shall prove Theorem 1 and Corollary 2.

### 3.1 Generalities and notation

Let $X$ be a topological space, and let $x_{0} \in X$ be a basepoint, and let $I=[0,1]$. If $l$ is a path in $X$ parametrised by $t \in I$ then let $l^{-1}$ denote its inverse, in other words $l^{-1}(t)=l(1-t)$ for all $t \in I$, and if $x \in X$ then let $c_{x}$ denote the constant path at $x$. If $l, l^{\prime}$ are paths in $X$ such that $l(1)=l^{\prime}(0)$, then $l * l^{\prime}$ will denote their concatenation. Let $\Omega X$ denote the loop space of $\left(X, x_{0}\right)$, and if $\omega \in \Omega X$ then let $[\omega]$ denote the associated element of $\pi_{1}\left(X, x_{0}\right)$. If $Y$ is a topological space and $f: X \longrightarrow Y$ is a map, then we shall always take the basepoint of $E_{f}$ and $I_{f}$ defined in equations (1) and (2) to be $\left(x_{0}, c_{f\left(x_{0}\right)}\right)$.

We define the following notation that will be used throughout the rest of the manuscript. Let $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ be the unit sphere in $\mathbb{R}^{3}$, let $\widetilde{z}_{0}=(0,0,1)$, let $\mathbb{D}$ be the open disc $\mathbb{S}^{2} \backslash\left\{-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$, let $C$ be the open cylinder $\mathbb{S}^{2} \backslash\left\{\widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$, and let $\tau: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be the antipodal map. We equip $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ with spherical coordinates $(\theta, \varphi)$, where $\theta \in[0,2 \pi)$ is the longitude whose prime meridian passes through $\widetilde{x}_{0}$ and $\varphi \in\left[-\frac{\pi}{2}, \frac{\pi}{2}\right]$ is the latitude. Let $n_{0}=3\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.n_{0}=2\right)$ if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$, let $n \geq n_{0}$, and for $j \in\left\{0,1, \ldots, n-n_{0}\right\}$,
let $\widetilde{x}_{j}=\left(0, \frac{\pi}{2}\left(\frac{j}{j+1}\right)\right)$ and $x_{j}=\pi\left(\widetilde{x}_{j}\right)$, where $\pi: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ denotes the universal covering map. Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ), and let $\mathbb{M}=\mathbb{D}$ (resp. $\mathbb{M}=C$ ). We take the basepoint $W_{n}=\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{n}\right)$ of both $F_{n}(M)$ and $\prod_{1}^{n} M$ to be ( $\left.\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{x}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{x}_{n-3}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$ (resp. $\left(x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, z_{0}\right)$ ), where $z_{0}=\pi\left(\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$, and the basepoint of both $F_{n-1}(M \backslash$ $\left\{w_{n}\right\}$ ) and $\prod_{i=1}^{n-1} M$ to be $W_{n}^{\prime}=\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{n-1}\right)$. Let $G=\left\{\operatorname{Id}_{\mathbb{D}}\right\}$ (resp. $G=\left\langle\left.\tau\right|_{C}\right\rangle$ ). Then $F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M})$ is the usual configuration space $F_{n-1}(\mathbb{D})$ of $\mathbb{D}$ (resp. the orbit configuration space $F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ of $C$ ) that we equip with the basepoint $W_{n}^{\prime \prime}=\left(w_{1}^{\prime \prime}, \ldots, w_{n-1}^{\prime \prime}\right)$, where $W_{n}^{\prime \prime}=\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{x}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{x}_{n-3}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$ (resp. $W_{n}^{\prime \prime}=\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{x}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{x}_{n-2}\right)$ ). So as not to overload the notation, we shall omit these basepoints in much of what follows, and we shall identify $\pi_{1}\left(\Pi_{1}^{n} \Omega M,\left(c_{w_{1}}, \ldots, c_{w_{n}}\right)\right)$ with $\left.\pi_{2}\left(\Pi_{1}^{n} M, W_{n}\right)\right)$ in the usual manner.

Let $E_{n}$ and $I_{n}$ (resp. $E_{n}^{\prime}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime}$ ) denote the mapping path and homotopy fibre respectively of the inclusion $\iota_{n}: F_{n}(M) \longleftrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} M$ (resp. $\left.\iota_{n}^{\prime}: F_{n-1}\left(M \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right) \longleftrightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} M\right)$ that are defined using (1) and (2) by:

$$
\begin{align*}
E_{n} & =\left\{(x, \lambda) \in F_{n}(M) \times \prod_{1}^{n} M^{I} \mid \lambda(0)=x\right\} \\
I_{n} & =\left\{(x, \lambda) \in E_{n} \mid \lambda(1)=W_{n}\right\} \\
E_{n}^{\prime} & =\left\{(y, \mu) \in F_{n-1}\left(M \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right) \times \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} M^{I} \mid \mu(0)=y\right\} \\
I_{n}^{\prime} & =\left\{(y, \mu) \in E_{n}^{\prime} \mid \mu(1)=W_{n}^{\prime}\right\} . \tag{10}
\end{align*}
$$

The basepoints are chosen in accordance with the convention of the first paragraph. Let $j_{n}: I_{n} \longrightarrow E_{n}$ and $j_{n}^{\prime}: I_{n}^{\prime} \longrightarrow E_{n}^{\prime}$ denote the associated inclusions. By [A, Proposition 3.5.8(2) and Remark 3.5.9(1)], the maps $f_{n}: F_{n}(M) \longrightarrow E_{n}$ and $g_{n}: E_{n} \longrightarrow F_{n}(M)$ (resp. $f_{n}^{\prime}: F_{n-1}\left(M \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right) \longrightarrow E_{n}^{\prime}$ and $\left.g_{n}^{\prime}: E_{n}^{\prime} \longrightarrow F_{n-1}\left(M \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right)\right)$ defined by $f_{n}(x)=$ $\left(x, c_{l_{n}(x)}\right)$ and $g_{n}(x, \lambda)=x$ (resp. $f_{n}^{\prime}(y)=\left(y, c_{l_{n}^{\prime}(y)}\right)$ and $\left.g_{n}^{\prime}(y, \mu)=y\right)$ are mutual homotopy equivalences. Let $\alpha_{n}: E_{n}^{\prime} \longrightarrow E_{n}$ be defined by $\alpha_{n}(y, \mu)=\left(y, w_{n}, \mu, c_{w_{n}}\right)$, let $\widehat{\alpha}_{n}: \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} M \longrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} M$ be defined by $\widehat{\alpha}_{n}(y)=\left(y, w_{n}\right)$, and let

$$
\widehat{\alpha}_{n}{\mid F_{n-1}\left(M \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right)}: F_{n-1}\left(M \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right) \longrightarrow F_{n}(M)
$$

denote its restriction to the corresponding configuration spaces. We define the map $\widehat{\iota}_{n}: E_{n} \longrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} M\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\widehat{\iota_{n}^{\prime}}: E_{n}^{\prime} \longrightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} M\right)$ by $\widehat{\iota}_{n}(x, \lambda)=\lambda(1)$ (resp. $\left.\widehat{\iota_{n}^{\prime}}(y, \mu)=\mu(1)\right)$. Note that $\widehat{\iota}_{n} \circ f_{n}=\iota_{n}$, and that $\alpha_{n}$ restricts to a map from $I_{n}^{\prime}$ to $I_{n}$ that we denote by $\alpha_{n}^{\prime}$. Applying [A, pages 91 and 108], we obtain the following commutative diagram:

where the rows are fibrations. Let $d_{n}^{\prime}: \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} \Omega M \longrightarrow I_{n}^{\prime}$ (resp. $d_{n}: \prod_{1}^{n} \Omega M \longrightarrow I_{n}$ ) denote the boundary map corresponding to the upper (resp. lower) fibration of (11), and for all $k \geq 1$, let:

$$
\partial_{n, k}^{\prime}=\left(d_{n}^{\prime}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n-1} M\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k-1}\left(I_{n}^{\prime}\right)\left(\operatorname{resp} . \partial_{n, k}=\left(d_{n}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k-1}\left(I_{n}\right)\right)
$$

denote the induced boundary homomorphism on the level of $\pi_{k}$. We recall the construction of these maps in the following lemma that will be used in Section 5.

LEMMA 13. With the above notation, we have $d_{n}^{\prime}(\omega)=\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{n-1}, \omega\right)\left(\right.$ resp. $d_{n}(\omega)=$ $\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{n}, \omega\right)$ ) for all $\omega \in \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} \Omega M\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\omega \in \prod_{1}^{n} \Omega M\right)$.

Proof. The statement of the lemma is a consequence of the general construction of the boundary map of a fibration, which we now recall. Let $f:\left(X, x_{0}\right) \longrightarrow\left(Y, y_{0}\right)$ be a map between based topological spaces, let $I_{f}$ denote the homotopy fibre of $f$, let $E Y=\left\{\lambda \in Y^{I} \mid \lambda(1)=y_{0}\right\}$ be the path space of $Y$, and let $\Omega Y \longrightarrow E Y \xrightarrow{P_{0}} Y$ be the path space fibration [A, page 85], where $P_{0}(\lambda)=\lambda(0)$. By [A, Proposition 3.3.12 and Definition 3.3.13], we have the following pullback square:

where $u(x, \lambda)=\lambda$ and $v(x, \lambda)=x$ for all $(x, \lambda) \in I_{f}, v$ is the principal fibration induced by $f$, and $u$ induces a homeomorphism between the fibre $F_{v}$ of $v$ and $\Omega Y$ whose inverse $u^{\prime}: \Omega Y \longrightarrow F_{v}$ is defined by $u^{\prime}(\omega)=\left(x_{0}, \omega\right)$ for all $\omega \in \Omega Y$. The boundary map $d: \Omega Y \longrightarrow I_{f}$ is then defined by $d=i \circ u^{\prime}$, where $i: F_{v} \longrightarrow I_{f}$ is inclusion, so $d(\omega)=$ $\left(x_{0}, \omega\right)$ for all $\omega \in \Omega Y$. The result then follows by taking $X=F_{n-1}\left(M \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right), Y=$ $\prod_{i=1}^{n-1} M$ and $f=\iota_{n}^{\prime}$ (resp. $X=F_{n}(M), Y=\prod_{1}^{n} M$ and $\left.f=\iota_{n}\right)$.

The following remarks will play an important rôle in the proof of Theorem 1.

## REMARKS 14.

(a) Let $p: E \longrightarrow B$ be a fibration with fibre $F$, let $E^{\prime}$ be a subspace of $E$, and suppose that the restriction $p^{\prime}=\left.p\right|_{E^{\prime}}: E^{\prime} \longrightarrow B$ is also a fibration, with fibre $F^{\prime}$. Let $\iota: E^{\prime} \longrightarrow E$ denote inclusion, and let $\iota^{\prime}=\left.\iota\right|_{F^{\prime}}: F^{\prime} \longrightarrow F$ denote the restriction of $\iota$ to $F^{\prime}$. The inclusions of the fibres in the corresponding total spaces induce an explicit homotopy equivalence between the homotopy fibres $I_{\iota}$ and $I_{\iota^{\prime}}$ of $\iota$ and $\iota^{\prime}$ respectively. Although this result seems to be folklore and is well known to the experts in the field, we were unable to locate a proof in the literature, and so we give one in Proposition 36 in the Appendix of this paper. A consequence of this proposition is that the map $\alpha_{n}^{\prime}: I_{n}^{\prime} \longrightarrow I_{n}$ is a homotopy equivalence (see Corollary 37).
(b) Suppose that $f: X \longrightarrow Y$ is null homotopic, and let $c: X \longrightarrow Y$ denote the constant map that sends the whole of $X$ onto $y_{0}$. By [A, Proposition 3.3.17], $I_{f}$ and $I_{c}$ have the same homotopy type. On the other hand, $I_{c}=\left\{(x, \lambda) \in X \times Y^{I} \mid \lambda(0)=\lambda(1)=y_{0}\right\}=$ $X \times \Omega Y$. Therefore $I_{f}$ has the same homotopy type as $X \times \Omega Y$.

Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ), and let $t_{c}: F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M}) \longrightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be the constant map that sends every point of $F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M})$ to $W_{n}^{\prime \prime}$, which we take to be the basepoint of $\prod_{i=1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}$ at this level. By Remarks 14(b), its homotopy fibre is given by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{c}=F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M}) \times \Omega\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right) \tag{12}
\end{equation*}
$$

which we equip with the basepoint $W_{c}$ in accordance with the convention given in the first paragraph of this section. Let $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ be the homotopy fibre of the inclusion map $\iota_{n}^{\prime \prime}: F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M}) \longrightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}$ defined by $\iota_{n}^{\prime \prime}(u)=u$ for all $u \in F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M})$, and also equipped with the basepoint $W_{c}$. So:

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{n}^{\prime \prime}=\left\{(u, \mu) \in F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M}) \times\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)^{I} \mid \mu(0)=u \text { and } \mu(1)=W_{n}^{\prime \prime}\right\} \tag{13}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, then $\iota_{n}^{\prime \prime}=\iota_{n}^{\prime}$, so $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}=I_{n}^{\prime}$ by (10). Let $h_{n}: I_{c} \longrightarrow F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M})$ and $h_{n}^{\prime \prime}: I_{n}^{\prime \prime} \longrightarrow F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M})$ denote the projections onto the first factor, and let $\widehat{\pi}: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow M$ be the identity $\operatorname{Id}_{\mathbb{S}^{2}}$ (resp. the universal covering $\pi: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ). Then $\hat{\pi}$ restricts to a map from $\mathbb{D}$ (resp. from $C$ ) to $M \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}$ that we also denote by $\hat{\pi}$. Let $\alpha_{\pi}: I_{n}^{\prime \prime} \longrightarrow I_{n}^{\prime}$ be defined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha_{\pi}\left(y_{0}, \ldots, y_{n-2}, l_{0}, \ldots, l_{n-2}\right)=\left(\widehat{\pi}\left(y_{0}\right), \ldots, \widehat{\pi}\left(y_{n-2}\right), \widehat{\pi} \circ l_{0}, \ldots, \widehat{\pi} \circ l_{n-2}\right) \tag{14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ then $\alpha_{\pi}$ is the identity. Let $p: \prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \Pi_{1}^{n-1} M$ denote the identity (resp. the $2^{n-1}$-fold universal covering), and let $p^{\prime}: F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M}) \longrightarrow F_{n-1}\left(M \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right)$ denote the restriction of $p$ to $F_{n-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M})$. If $\alpha_{c}: I_{c} \longrightarrow I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ is a pointed map that satisfies $h_{n}^{\prime \prime} \circ \alpha_{c}(u, \mu)=u$ for all $(u, \mu) \in I_{c}$, using the definitions, one may check that the following diagram of pointed spaces and maps is commutative:

with the possible exception of the upper right-hand square. In the proof of Theorem 1, we shall see that this square commutes up to homotopy (see Remark 18), and in Section 5.2, we exhibit a map $\alpha_{c}$ that satisfies the above condition (see equation (45)).

To end this section, we state and prove the following lemma that will be used to analyse the upper part of the long exact sequence in homotopy of the homotopy fibration of $\iota_{n}$.

Lemma 15. Let $A$ and $B$ be Abelian groups, and let $n \geq 2$. Assume that $\Theta: A \longrightarrow \bigoplus_{i=1}^{n} B$ is an injective homomorphism, and suppose that there exists $i \in\{1, \ldots, n\}$ such that the composition $\pi_{i} \circ \Theta: A \longrightarrow B$ is an isomorphism, where $\pi_{i}: \bigoplus_{i=1}^{n} B \longrightarrow B$ is projection onto the $i^{\text {th }}$ factor. Then the short exact sequence:

$$
\begin{equation*}
1 \longrightarrow A \xrightarrow{\Theta} \oplus_{i=1}^{n} B \xrightarrow{\zeta}\left(\bigoplus_{i=1}^{n} B\right) / \operatorname{Im}(\Theta) \longrightarrow 1 \tag{16}
\end{equation*}
$$

splits, where $\zeta: \bigoplus_{i=1}^{n} B \longrightarrow\left(\bigoplus_{i=1}^{n} B\right) / \operatorname{Im}(\Theta)$ denotes the canonical projection.

Proof. Since the groups that appear in the short exact sequence (16) are Abelian, the existence of a section for $\zeta$ is equivalent to that of a section for $\Theta$. If $g: B \longrightarrow A$ is inverse of the isomorphism $\pi_{i} \circ \Theta$ then the map $h: \bigoplus_{i=1}^{n} B \longrightarrow A$ given by $h=g \circ \pi_{i}$ is a homomorphism and defines a section for $\Theta$.

### 3.2 Proof of Theorem 1

In this section, we prove Theorem 1, from which we shall deduce Corollary 2. We first prove Lemma 16, which will play an important rôle in the proof of Theorem 1(b), but is interesting in its own right.

LEMMA 16. For all $n \in \mathbb{N}$, the space $F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ is a $K\left(G_{n}, 1\right)$, and $G_{n}$ is isomorphic to an iterated semi-direct product of the form $\mathbb{F}_{2 n-1} \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{2 n-3} \rtimes\left(\cdots \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{3} \rtimes \mathbb{Z}\right) \cdots\right)\right)$, where for $i=1, \ldots, n-1, \mathbb{F}_{2 i+1}$ is a free group of rank $2 i+1$.

REMARK 17. This description of $G_{n}$ is similar to that of Artin combing for the Artin pure braid groups. The actions will be computed in Section 4.

Proof of Lemma 16. If $n=1$ then $F_{1}{ }^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)=C$, and the result is clear. So suppose that $n \geq 2$. The proof is similar to that for the configuration spaces of the disc, and makes use of the Fadell-Neuwirth fibrations. The map $q_{n}: F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C) \longrightarrow F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ defined by forgetting the last coordinate is well defined, and as in [FaN], may be seen to be a locally-trivial fibration (see also [Fa, Theorem 2.2] and [CX, Lemma 4]). The fibre over the basepoint $W_{n}^{\prime \prime}=\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{x}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{x}_{n-2}\right)$ of $F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ may be identified with the set $C \backslash\left\{ \pm \widetilde{x}_{0}, \ldots, \pm \widetilde{x}_{n-2}\right\}$. Furthermore, $q_{n}$ admits a section $s_{n}$ given by choosing (for example) a point sufficiently close to $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ in a continuous manner (see also [Fa, Theorem 3.2], as well as the beginning of Section 4 and Remark 21 for two different possibilities for $s_{n}$ ). Since the fibre has the homotopy type of a wedge of circles, taking the long exact sequence in homotopy of the fibration $q_{n}$, we see that $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)\right) \longrightarrow$ $\pi_{k}\left(F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)\right)$ is an isomorphism for all $k \geq 3$ and is injective if $k=2$, and that there exists a split short exact sequence:

$$
\begin{equation*}
1 \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(C \backslash\left\{ \pm \widetilde{x}_{0}, \ldots, \pm \widetilde{x}_{n-2}\right\}\right) \longleftrightarrow G_{n} \xrightarrow{\substack{\left(q_{n}\right)_{\# 1} \\\left(s_{n}\right) \ldots 1}} G_{n-1} \longrightarrow 1 \tag{17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Induction on $n$ then shows that $\pi_{k}\left(F_{n}{ }^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)\right)$ is trivial for all $k \geq 2$. The first part of the statement then follows. By induction on $n$, equation (17), the isomorphism $G_{1} \cong \mathbb{Z}$ and the fact that $\pi_{1}\left(C \backslash\left\{ \pm \widetilde{x}_{0}, \ldots, \pm \widetilde{x}_{n-2}\right\}\right) \cong \mathbb{F}_{2 n-1}$, we obtain the isomorphism given in the second part of the statement.

Proof of Theorem 1. Let $n \geq 2$. We make use of the notation and basepoints of Section 3.1. By Corollary 37, $I_{n}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime}$ have the same homotopy type.
(a) Suppose first that $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$. We claim that the map $\iota_{n}^{\prime}: F_{n-1}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2} \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right) \longleftrightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}$ is null homotopic. To see this, observe that for $1 \leq i \leq n-1$, the following diagram is
commutative:

where $p_{i}$ and $\widetilde{p}_{i}$ are the projections of Section 2. The contractibility of $\mathbb{S}^{2} \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}$ implies that the composition $\iota_{2}^{\prime} \circ p_{i}$ is null homotopic, so the composition $\widetilde{p}_{i} \circ \iota_{n}^{\prime}$ is null homotopic for all $1 \leq i \leq n-1$, and hence $\iota_{n}^{\prime}$ is null homotopic, which proves the claim. The first part of Theorem 1(a) follows by applying Remarks 14(b) to $\iota_{n}^{\prime}$. The equivalence with the second part is clear using the fact that $F_{n-1}(\mathbb{D})$ is an Eilenberg-Mac Lane space of type $K\left(P_{n-1}, 1\right)$ [FaN].
(b) Let $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. Considering $F_{n-1}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2} \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right)$ to be a subspace of $\prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ via the inclusion $\iota_{n}^{\prime}$, one may check that $F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)=p^{-1}\left(F_{n-1}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2} \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right)\right)$, and that the map $p^{\prime}: F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C) \longrightarrow F_{n-1}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2} \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right)$ is also a regular $2^{n-1}$-fold covering map. Now consider the middle right-hand commutative square of (15). We claim that $I_{n}^{\prime}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ have the same homotopy type. To see this, first note that since $p$ is the universal covering map and $\left(l_{n}^{\prime}\right)_{\# 1}$ is surjective, it follows using standard properties of covering spaces that $p_{\# 1}^{\prime}: \pi_{1}\left(F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)\right) \longrightarrow \operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(\iota_{n}^{\prime}\right)_{\# 1}\right)$ is an isomorphism. Consider the homotopy fibrations:

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{n}^{\prime \prime} \xrightarrow{h_{n}^{\prime \prime}} F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C) \xrightarrow{\iota_{n}^{\prime \prime}} \prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2} \text { and } I_{n}^{\prime} \xrightarrow{g_{n}^{\prime} \circ j_{n}^{\prime}} F_{n-1}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2} \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right) \xrightarrow{\iota_{n}^{\prime}} \prod_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{R} P^{2} \tag{18}
\end{equation*}
$$

of the second and third rows of (15), and for $k \in \mathbb{N}$, let $\partial_{n, k}^{\prime \prime}: \pi_{k}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k-1}\left(I_{n}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ denote the boundary homomorphism corresponding to the first of these. Using the commutativity of these two rows, we obtain a map $\xi: I_{n}^{\prime \prime} \longrightarrow I_{n}^{\prime}$ of homotopy fibres given by $\xi(x, \lambda)=\left(p^{\prime}(x), p \circ \lambda\right)$ for all $(x, \lambda) \in I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ that satisfies $p^{\prime} \circ h_{n}^{\prime \prime}=\left(g_{n}^{\prime} \circ j_{n}^{\prime}\right) \circ \xi$, and taking the long exact sequence in homotopy of the homotopy fibrations (18), we obtain the following commutative diagram of exact sequences:

Now $F_{n-1}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2} \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right)$ is an Eilenberg-Mac Lane space of type $K(\pi, 1)$, and by Lemma 16, so is $F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$. Since the homomorphism $p_{\# k}$ is an isomorphism for all $k \geq 2$, it follows from (19) that $\xi_{\# k}$ is an isomorphism for all $k \geq 2$. Studying the tail of (19), and using the surjectivity of $\left(\iota_{n}^{\prime}\right)_{\# 1}$ and the fact that $F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ and $F_{n-1}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2} \backslash\left\{w_{n}\right\}\right)$ are path connected, we deduce that $\pi_{0}\left(I_{n}^{\prime}\right)$ and $\pi_{0}\left(I_{n}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ consist of a single point, so $\xi_{\# 0}$ is a bijection. Finally, from the remaining part of the long exact sequence in homotopy, we have:

and since $p_{\# 1}^{\prime}$ is an isomorphism, we obtain the following commutative diagram of short exact sequences:


The 5-Lemma implies that $\xi_{\# 1}$ is an isomorphism. We conclude that $\xi_{\# k}$ is an isomorphism for all $k \geq 0$. Now by [A, pages 204-5] or [M, page 247], the homotopy fibre $I_{f}$ of a map $f: X \longrightarrow Y$ between two topological spaces $X$ and $Y$ is the standard homotopy pullback of the spaces and maps $* \longrightarrow Y \stackrel{f}{\longleftarrow} X$, and by [M, Lemma 36], if $X$ and $Y$ each have the homotopy type of a CW-complex, then $I_{f}$ has the homotopy type of a CW-complex. Applying this to the maps $\iota_{n}^{\prime}$ and $\iota_{n}^{\prime \prime}$, we conclude that $I_{n}^{\prime}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ each have the homotopy type of a CW-complex. Whitehead's theorem then implies that they have the same homotopy type, which proves the claim.

It remains to determine the homotopy type of $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$. Let $1 \leq i \leq n-1$, and consider the following commutative diagram:

where $p_{i}$ and $\widetilde{p}_{i}$ are the projections of Section 2. The composition $\left.\iota_{2}^{\prime \prime} \circ p_{i}\right|_{F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau}(C)}$ is null homotopic because $C$ has the homotopy type of a circle and $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ is simply connected, so the composition $\widetilde{p}_{i} \circ \iota_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ is null homotopic, from which it follows that $l_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ is also null homotopic. So $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ has the homotopy type of $F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C) \times \Omega\left(\Pi_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ by Remarks 14(b), which proves the first part of the statement of part (b). The second part then follows from Lemma 16.

REMARK 18. In the course of the proof of Theorem 1, we showed that:
(a) $I_{n}^{\prime}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ have the same homotopy type.
(b) $\iota_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ is null homotopic (recall that $\iota_{n}^{\prime \prime}=\iota_{n}^{\prime}$ if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ ). From this, it follows that:
(i) the upper right-hand square of the diagram (15) commutes up to homotopy, and so the same is true for the whole diagram.
(ii) $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ and $I_{c}$ have the same homotopy type by [A, Proposition 3.3.17].

In Lemma 26, we shall exhibit explicit homotopy equivalences between $I_{c}, I_{n}^{\prime}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$.
We now prove Corollary 2.
Proof of Corollary 2. We make use of the notation of Section 3.1. Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, and let $n \geq 2$ and $k \geq 1$. Taking the long exact sequence in homotopy of the lower fibration of (11), and using the fact that $\widehat{\iota}_{n} \circ f_{n}=\iota_{n}$, we obtain the following long exact sequence:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ldots \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(I_{n}\right) \xrightarrow{\left(g_{n} \circ j_{n}\right)_{\# k}} \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}(M)\right) \xrightarrow{\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}} \pi_{k}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right) \xrightarrow{\partial_{n, k}} \pi_{k-1}\left(I_{n}\right) \longrightarrow \ldots \tag{20}
\end{equation*}
$$

(a) Suppose that $k \geq 3$ and $n \geq 2$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $n=k=2$ ). Then $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$ and $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\#(k-1)}$ are injective by Lemma 7(b) (resp. $\left(\iota_{2}\right)_{\# 2}$ is injective by Lemma 7(b) and $P_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ is trivial), from which we obtain the short exact sequence (3), where $\pi_{k-1}\left(I_{n}\right)$ has been replaced by $\pi_{k-1}\left(\Omega\left(\Pi_{1}^{n-1} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right)$ via the homotopy equivalences of Theorem 1 . We have also used the fact that $F_{n-1}\left(\mathbb{D}^{2}\right)$ and $F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ are Eilenberg-Mac Lane spaces of type $K(\pi, 1)$ by [FaN] and Lemma 16 (resp. $P_{1}\left(\mathbb{D}^{2}\right)$ is trivial). Proposition 9(b) and Proposition 10 (resp. Proposition 9(a)) show that $\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$ is diagonal (resp. anti-diagonal). Further, if $i \in\{1, \ldots, n\}$, by (7) and Lemma 7(a), $\left(\widetilde{p}_{i}\right)_{\# k} \circ\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F_{n}(M)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}(M)$ is an isomorphism, and taking $A=\pi_{k}\left(F_{n}(M)\right), B=\pi_{k}(M), \Theta=\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\# k}$ and $\pi_{i}=\left(\widetilde{p}_{i}\right)_{\# k}$ in Lemma 15, it follows that the short exact sequence (3) splits. This proves the first part of the statement in each case. The application of Theorem 5 and standard facts about homotopy groups yields the second short exact sequence of the statement of part (a).
(b) Let $k=2$ and $n \geq 3$. Since $\pi_{2}\left(F_{n}(M)\right)$ is trivial by Theorem 5 , we obtain the exact sequence (4) by applying once more Theorem 1 to equation (20). If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, the sequence becomes short exact, but does not split because the middle group is torsion free and the quotient has torsion. The remaining exact sequences in the statement then follow using standard results about homotopy groups.

## 4 A presentation of $G_{n}$

Let $n \geq 1$. Once more, we make use of the notation of Section 3.1. In this section, we shall exhibit a presentation of the fundamental group $G_{n}$ of the orbit configuration space $F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$. We identify $C$ with the open annulus $(0,1) \times \mathbb{S}^{1}$ in the complex plane $\mathbb{C}$, where we identify $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ with the origin in $\mathbb{C}$, and up to this identification, if $z=r e^{i \theta} \in C$ then we take its antipodal point $z^{\prime}$ to be $(1-r) e^{i(\theta+\pi)}$. Let $v_{1}, \ldots, v_{n}$ be base points in $C$ that lie on the negative part of the $x$-axis, and let $v_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, v_{n}^{\prime}$ be the corresponding antipodal points (see Figure 1). As we saw in the proof of Lemma 16, the map $q_{n+1}: F_{n+1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C) \longrightarrow F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ given by forgetting the last point is a locally-trivial fibration that admits a section. The section is not unique: as in the proof of Lemma 16, it will be convenient in what follows to define $s_{n+1}: F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C) \longrightarrow F_{n+1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ by $s_{n+1}\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}\right)=$ $\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}, y_{n+1}\right)$, where $y_{n+1}$ is a point sufficiently close to $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ and lying on the negative $x$-axis (see for example the proof of [GG1, Theorem 6]). Then the corresponding antipodal point $y_{n+1}^{\prime}$ lies on the positive $x$-axis close to the outer boundary of $C$, and the induced homomorphism $\left(s_{n+1}\right)_{\#}: G_{n} \longrightarrow G_{n+1}$ is a section for $\left(q_{n+1}\right)_{\# \text {. Another useful }}$ choice of section will be described in Remark 21.

If $j \in \mathbb{N}$, the free group $\pi_{1}\left(C \backslash\left\{v_{1}, v_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, v_{j-1}, v_{j-1}^{\prime}\right\}, v_{j}\right)$ of rank $2 j-1$ admits a basis $\left\{\rho_{j, i} \mid 0 \leq i \leq 2 j-2\right\}$, where for $0 \leq i \leq 2 j-2$, we represent the generators $\rho_{j, i}$ by the loops depicted in Figure 1. If $j \leq i \leq 2 j-2$ then $\rho_{j, i}$ is represented by a loop based at $v_{j}$ that wraps round the point $v_{i-j+1}^{\prime}$. If $j=n$ then via the identification of the fibre of $q_{n+1}$ over $\left(v_{1}, \ldots, v_{n}\right)$ with $C \backslash\left\{v_{1}, v_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, v_{n}, v_{n}^{\prime}\right\}$, this group is isomorphic to $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(q_{n+1}\right)_{\#}\right)$. However, we have to take into account the fact that we are working in the orbit configuration space. If $\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n+1}\right) \in F_{n+1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ then for all $1 \leq i<j \leq n+1, y_{i}$ should not only be different from $y_{j}$, but it must also avoid $y_{j}^{\prime}$. We thus interpret the fibre as an 'honest' subspace of $F_{n+1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$, and for each $0 \leq i \leq 2 j-2$, we will represent the


Figure 1: Generators of $\pi_{1}\left(C \backslash\left\{v_{1}, v_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, v_{j-1}, v_{j-1}^{\prime}\right\}, v_{j}\right)$.


Figure 2: The generator $\rho_{j, 0}$.


Figure 3: The generator $\rho_{j, i}, 1 \leq i<j$.
element $\rho_{j, i}$ by a pair of antipodal loops (see Figures $2-4$ ). With our choice of section, if $j \leq n$, the image of $\rho_{j, i}$ ( $\rho_{j, i}$ being considered as an element of $G_{j}$ ) by the homomorphism $\left(s_{n} \circ \cdots \circ s_{j+1}\right)_{\#}$ is the element $\rho_{j, i}$ of $G_{n}$. Using induction on $n$, it follows from this and the fact that $G_{n}$ is isomorphic to the internal semi-direct product $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\right) \rtimes$ $\left(s_{n}\right)_{\#}\left(G_{n-1}\right)$ that the group $G_{n}$ is generated by the set $\bigcup_{j=1}^{n}\left\{\rho_{j, i} \mid 0 \leq i \leq 2 j-2\right\}$. We will shortly give a presentation of $G_{n}$, but we first define several elements that will serve to simplify the statement:


Figure 4: The generator $\rho_{j, i}, j \leq i \leq 2 j-2$.
(a) for all $1 \leq j<k \leq n, D_{j, k}=\rho_{k, j} \rho_{k, j+1} \cdots \rho_{k, k-1}$ (see Figure 5).
(b) for all $1 \leq j<k \leq n, C_{k, j}=\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{j+1, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, j} D_{j+1, k} \rho_{k, 0}\left(D_{j+1, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, j} D_{j+1, k}\right.$ is the mirror image of $\rho_{k, j}^{-1}$ with respect to the horizontal axis, see Figure 6).
(c) for all $1 \leq k \leq n$ and $k \leq m<q \leq 2 k-2, E_{k, m, q}=\rho_{k, m} \rho_{k, m+1} \cdots \rho_{k, q}$. The element $E_{k, m, q}$ is represented by the loop (and its antipode) based at $v_{k}$ that winds successively around the points $v_{m-k+1}^{\prime}, v_{m-k+2}^{\prime}, \ldots, v_{q-k+1}^{\prime}$ (see Figure 7).


Figure 5: The element $D_{j, k}, 1 \leq j<k \leq n$.


Figure 6: The element $C_{k, j}, 1 \leq j<k \leq n$.


Figure 7: The element $E_{k, m, q}, 1 \leq k \leq n$ and $k \leq m<q \leq 2 k-2$.

Proposition 19. Let $n \in \mathbb{N}$. The following constitutes a presentation of the group $G_{n}$ : generating set: $\bigcup_{j=1}^{n}\left\{\rho_{j, i} \mid 0 \leq i \leq 2 j-2\right\}$.
relations: let $1 \leq j<k \leq n$. Then:
(I)

$$
\rho_{j, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{j, 0}^{-1}= \begin{cases}\rho_{k, l} & \text { if } l=0 \text { or } j<l<k \\ C_{k, j} \rho_{k, l} C_{k, j}^{-1} & \text { if } 1 \leq l<j \\ & \text { or if } k \leq l \leq k+j-2 \\ C_{k, j} & \text { if } l=j \\ C_{k, j} E_{k, k, k+j-2}^{-1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{1, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l} D_{1, k} \rho_{k, 0} E_{k, k, k+j-2} C_{k, j}^{-1} & \text { if } l=k+j-1 \\ C_{k, j} \rho_{k, k+j-1} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k, k+j-1}^{-1} C_{k, j}^{-1} & \text { if } k+j \leq l \leq 2 k-2\end{cases}
$$

(II) for all $1 \leq i<j, \rho_{j, i} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{j, i}^{-1}=\rho_{k, l}$ if $0 \leq l \leq i-1, j+1 \leq l \leq k+i-2, k+i \leq l \leq$ $k+j-2$ or $k+j \leq l \leq 2 k-2$, and

$$
\rho_{j, i} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{j, i}^{-1}= \begin{cases}\rho_{k, j}^{-1} \rho_{k, i} \rho_{k, j} & \text { if } l=i \\ {\left[\rho_{k, j}^{-1} \rho_{k, i}^{-1}\right] \rho_{k, l}\left[\rho_{k, i}^{-1}, \rho_{k, j}^{-1}\right]} & \text { if } i<l<j \\ \rho_{k, j}^{-1} \rho_{k, i}^{-1} \rho_{k, j} \rho_{k, i} \rho_{k, j} & \text { if } l=j \\ E_{k, k+i-1, k+j-1} E_{k, k+i, k+j-2}^{-1} \rho_{k, k+i-1} E_{k, k+i, k+j-2} E_{k, k+i-1, k+j-1}^{-1} & \text { if } l=k+i-1 \\ E_{k, k+i, k+j-2}^{-1} E_{k, k+i-1, k+j-2} \rho_{k, k+j-1} E_{k, k+i-1, k+j-2}^{-1} E_{k, k+i, k+j-2} & \text { if } l=k+j-1\end{cases}
$$

in the remaining cases.
(III) for all $j \leq i \leq 2 j-2, \rho_{j, i} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{j, i}^{-1}=\left[\rho_{k, j}^{-1}, \rho_{k, k+i-j}^{-1}\right] \rho_{k, l}\left[\rho_{k, k+i-j}^{-1}, \rho_{k, j}^{-1}\right]$ if $1 \leq l \leq i-j$, $i-j+2 \leq l \leq j-1, k+i-j+1 \leq l \leq k+j-2$ or $k+j \leq l \leq 2 k-2$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\rho_{j, i} \rho_{k, i-j+1} \rho_{j, i}^{-1}= & {\left[\rho_{k, j}^{-1}, \rho_{k, k+i-j}^{-1}\right] D_{i-j+1, k} \rho_{k, 0} E_{k, k, k+j-1} E_{k, k, k+j-2}^{-1} C_{k, i-j+1} E_{k, k, k+j-2} . } \\
& E_{k, k, k+j-1}^{-1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{i-j+1, k}^{-1}\left[\rho_{k, k+i-j^{\prime}}^{-1} \rho_{k, j}^{-1}\right],
\end{aligned}
$$

which is the case $l=i-j+1$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\rho_{j, i} \rho_{k, k+j-1} \rho_{j, i}^{-1}= & {\left[\rho_{k, j}^{-1}, \rho_{k, i-j+1}^{-1}\right] E_{k, k, k+j-2}^{-1} C_{k, i-j+1} E_{k, k, k+j-2} \rho_{k, k+j-1} E_{k, k, k+j-2}^{-1} C_{k, i-j+1}^{-1} . } \\
& E_{k, k, k+j-2}\left[\rho_{k, i-j+1}^{-1} \rho_{k, j}^{-1}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

which is the case $l=k+j-1$, and

$$
\rho_{j, i} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{j, i}^{-1}= \begin{cases}\rho_{k, l} & \text { if } l=0 \text { or } j+1 \leq l \leq k+i-j-1 \\ \rho_{k, j}^{-1} \rho_{k, k+i-j}^{-1} \rho_{k, j} \rho_{k, k+i-j} \rho_{k, j} & \text { if } l=j \\ \rho_{k, j}^{-1} \rho_{k, k+i-j} \rho_{k, j} & \text { if } l=k+i-j\end{cases}
$$

in the remaining cases.
Proof. The proof is by induction on $n$. If $n=1$ then $G_{1}=\left\langle\rho_{1,0}\right\rangle \cong \mathbb{Z}$, and the given presentation is valid. So suppose that the result holds for some $n \geq 1$. As we saw above, $G_{n+1}$ is generated by $\bigcup_{j=1}^{n+1}\left\{\rho_{j, i} \mid 0 \leq i \leq 2 j-2\right\}$, and applying standard techniques to obtain a presentation of the group extension $G_{n+1}$ using the short exact sequence of the form (17) whose kernel is a free group [J, Proposition 1, page 139], the defining relations are of two types:
(i) the images under $\left(s_{n+1}\right)$ \# of the relators of the presentation of $G_{n}$, rewritten as elements of $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(p_{n+1}\right) \#\right)$.
(ii) the elements of the form $y x y^{-1}$, rewritten as elements of $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(p_{n+1}\right) \#\right)$, where

$$
x \in\left\{\rho_{n+1, l} \mid 0 \leq l \leq 2 n\right\} \text { and } y \in \bigcup_{j=1}^{n}\left\{\rho_{j, i} \mid 0 \leq i \leq 2 j-2\right\}
$$

Since $\left(s_{n+1}\right)_{\#}\left(\rho_{j, i}\right)=\rho_{j, i}$ for all $1 \leq j \leq n$ and $0 \leq i \leq 2 j-2$, the relators of $G_{n}$ are sent to relators of $G_{n+1}$ under $\left(s_{n+1}\right)_{\#}$, and so the relations of (i) above are those of $G_{n}$, but considered as relations in $G_{n+1}$. This gives rise to all of the relations (I)-(III) for $G_{n+1}$ with $1 \leq j<k \leq n$. It remains to analyse the relations emanating from (ii), which correspond to the relations (I)-(III) for $G_{n+1}$ with $1 \leq j \leq n$ and $k=n+1$. We obtain the following types of relation:
(I) conjugation of $\rho_{n+1, l}$ by the generator $\rho_{j, 0}$ of Figure 2 , for $1 \leq j \leq n$ and $0 \leq l \leq 2 n$.
(II) conjugation of $\rho_{n+1, l}$ by the generator $\rho_{j, i}$ of Figure 3, for $1 \leq i<j \leq n$ and $0 \leq l \leq 2 n$.
(III) conjugation of $\rho_{n+1, l}$ by the generator $\rho_{j, i}$ of Figure 4 , for $1 \leq j \leq n$ and $j \leq i \leq$ $2 j-2$ and $0 \leq l \leq 2 n$.
Using these figures, for all $0 \leq l \leq 2 n$ and $0 \leq i \leq 2 j-2$, the conjugate of $\rho_{n+1, l}$ by $\rho_{j, i}$ may be rewritten as an element of $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(p_{n+1}\right) \#\right)$. Although $\rho_{n+1, l}$ is also represented by two loops, the intersections between the two pairs of loops are symmetric, and geometrically it suffices to consider (and remove) the intersections between the two representative loops of $\rho_{j, i}$ with one representative loop of $\rho_{n+1, l}$. The verifications are left to the reader.

If $n \in \mathbb{N}$, let $\Theta_{n}=\rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{n, 0}$. We now show that the centre $Z\left(G_{n}\right)$ of $G_{n}$ is infinite cyclic, generated by $\Theta_{n}$.

Proposition 20. Let $n \in \mathbb{N}$. Then $Z\left(G_{n}\right)=\left\langle\Theta_{n}\right\rangle$.
Proof. Let $n \in \mathbb{N}$. In what follows, (I)-(III) refer to the corresponding relations of Proposition 19. Let $\Theta=\Theta_{n}$. We start by showing that $\Theta$ commutes with each generator $\rho_{k, l}$ of $G_{n}$, where $1 \leq k \leq n$ and $0 \leq l \leq 2 k-2$, which will imply that $\Theta \in Z\left(G_{n}\right)$. We consider three cases.
(a) Suppose that $l=0$. By (I), the generators of the form $\rho_{m, 0}, 1 \leq m \leq n$, commute pairwise, so $\rho_{k, 0}$ commutes with $\Theta$ for all $1 \leq k \leq n$, which proves the result in this case.
(b) Suppose that $1 \leq l<k$. By (I) and (II), $\rho_{k, l}$ and $\rho_{m, 0}$ commute if $m<l$ or if $k<m$, so:

$$
\begin{align*}
\Theta \rho_{k, l} \Theta^{-1} & =\rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{k, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1} \\
& =\rho_{k, 0} \rho_{l, 0} \cdots \rho_{k-1,0} \rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{l-1,0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{l-1,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1} \rho_{k-1,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{l, 0}^{-1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} \\
& =\rho_{k, 0} \rho_{l, 0} \cdots \rho_{k-1,0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k-1,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{l, 0}^{-1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} \tag{21}
\end{align*}
$$

using the fact that the $\rho_{m, 0}, 1 \leq m \leq n$, commute pairwise. By (I),

$$
\rho_{j, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{j, 0}^{-1}= \begin{cases}C_{k, j} \rho_{k, l} C_{k, j}^{-1} & \text { if } 1 \leq l<j \\ C_{k, l} & \text { if } l=j\end{cases}
$$

and so

$$
\begin{align*}
\rho_{l, 0} \cdots \rho_{k-1,0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k-1,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{l, 0}^{-1} & =\rho_{l, 0} \cdots \rho_{k-2,0} C_{k, k-1} \rho_{k, l} C_{k, k-1}^{-1} \rho_{k-2,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{l, 0}^{-1} \\
& =C_{k, k-1} \rho_{l, 0} \cdots \rho_{k-2,0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k-2,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{l, 0}^{-1} C_{k, k-1}^{-1} \\
& =C_{k, k-1} \cdots C_{k, l+1} \rho_{l, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{l, 0}^{-1} C_{k, l+1}^{-1} \cdots C_{k, k-1}^{-1} \\
& =C_{k, k-1} \cdots C_{k, l+1} C_{k, l} C_{k, l+1}^{-1} \cdots C_{k, k-1}^{-1} \tag{22}
\end{align*}
$$

because $C_{k, m}$ commutes with $\rho_{q, 0}$ for all $1 \leq q<m<k$. Since $\rho_{k, m} \cdots \rho_{k, k-1}=D_{m, k}$, for all $1 \leq m<k$, we have:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} \rho_{k, m} \cdots \rho_{k, k-1} \rho_{k, 0}=\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{m, k} \rho_{k, 0} \tag{23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us prove by reverse induction on $m$ that for all $1 \leq m<k$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{k, k-1} \cdots C_{k, m+1} C_{k, m}=\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{m, k} \rho_{k, 0} \tag{24}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $m=k-1$ then $C_{k, k-1}=\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} \rho_{k, k-1} \rho_{k, 0}=\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{k, k-1} \rho_{k, 0}$ from the definition of $C_{k, k-1}$ and (23), hence (24) is valid. So suppose that (24) holds for some $2 \leq m<k$. Then by induction and the definitions of $C_{k, m-1}$ and $D_{m, k}$, it follows that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
C_{k, k-1} \cdots C_{k, m+1} C_{k, m} C_{k, m-1} & =\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{m, k} \rho_{k, 0} \cdot \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{m, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, m-1} D_{m, k} \rho_{k, 0} \\
& =\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} \rho_{k, m-1} D_{m, k} \rho_{k}=\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{m-1, k} \rho_{k, 0}
\end{aligned}
$$

which proves (24). Combining equations (21), (22), (23) and (24), we see that $\Theta$ commutes with $\rho_{k, l}$ if $1 \leq l<k$.
(c) Suppose that $k \leq l \leq 2 k-2$. By (III), $\rho_{k, l}$ commutes with $\rho_{j, 0}$ for all $k+1 \leq j \leq n$ and by (I), the $\rho_{m, 0}, 1 \leq m \leq n$, commute pairwise, so:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Theta \rho_{k, l} \Theta^{-1}=\rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{n, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{n, 0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1}=\rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{k, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1} \\
& =\rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{l-k+1,0} \rho_{k, 0}\left(\rho_{l-k+2,0} \cdots \rho_{k-1,0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k-1,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{l-k+2,0}^{-1}\right) \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} \rho_{l-k+1,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1} \tag{25}
\end{align*}
$$

By (I), we have:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{m, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{m, 0}^{-1}=C_{k, m} \rho_{k, l} C_{k, m}^{-1} \text { for all } l-k+2 \leq m \leq k-1 \tag{26}
\end{equation*}
$$

By definition, $C_{k, m}=\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} \rho_{k, k-1}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{k, m+1}^{-1} \rho_{k, m} \rho_{k, m+1} \cdots \rho_{k, k-1} \rho_{k, 0}$, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{k, m} \rho_{s, 0}=\rho_{s, 0} C_{k, m} \quad \text { for all } 1 \leq s<m \text { by (I), } \tag{27}
\end{equation*}
$$

and hence:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\rho_{l-k+2,0} \cdots \rho_{k-1,0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k-1,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{l-k+2,0}^{-1} & =C_{k, k-1} \cdots C_{k, l-k+2} \rho_{k, l} C_{k, l-k+2}^{-1} \cdots C_{k, k-1}^{-1} \\
& =\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{l-k+2, k} \rho_{k, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{l-k+2, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, 0}
\end{aligned}
$$

by equations (24), (26) and (27). Therefore:
$\Theta \rho_{k, l} \Theta^{-1}=\rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{l-k+1,0} D_{l-k+2, k} \rho_{k, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{l-k+2, k}^{-1} \rho_{l-k+1,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1}$

$$
\begin{align*}
& =\rho_{l-k+1,0}\left(\rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{l-k, 0} D_{l-k+2, k} \rho_{k, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{l-k+2, k}^{-1} \rho_{l-k, 0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1}\right) \rho_{l-k+1,0}^{-1} \\
& =\rho_{l-k+1,0} D_{l-k+2, k} \rho_{k, 0}\left(\rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{l-k, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{l-k, 0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1}\right) \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{l-k+2, k}^{-1} \rho_{l-k+1,0}^{-1} \tag{28}
\end{align*}
$$

by (25), since $D_{l-k+2, k}=\rho_{k, l-k+2} \cdots \rho_{k, k-1}$, so it commutes with $\rho_{s, 0}$ for all $1 \leq s \leq$ $l-k+1$ by (I). Now from equation (24), we obtain:

$$
\begin{align*}
C_{k, l-k} \cdots C_{k, 1} & =\left(C_{k, k-1} \cdots C_{k, l-k+1}\right)^{-1} \cdot C_{k, k-1} \cdots C_{k, l-k+1} \cdot C_{k, l-k} \cdots C_{k, 1} \\
& =\rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{l-k+1, k}^{-1} D_{1, k} \rho_{k, 0} \tag{29}
\end{align*}
$$

and by (I), we have:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{m, 0} \rho_{k, q} \rho_{m, 0}^{-1}=C_{k, m} \rho_{k, k+m-1} \rho_{k, q} \rho_{k, k+m-1}^{-1} C_{k, m}^{-1} \quad \text { if } 1 \leq m \leq q-k \text { and } q \leq 2 k-2 \tag{30}
\end{equation*}
$$

So for all $1 \leq m \leq l-k$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \rho_{m, 0}\left(\rho_{k, m+k} \rho_{k, m+k+1} \cdots \rho_{k, l-1} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k, l-1}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{k, m+k+1}^{-1} \rho_{k, m+k}^{-1}\right) \rho_{m, 0}= \\
& \quad C_{k, m} \rho_{k, m+k-1} \rho_{k, m+k} \rho_{k, m+k+1} \cdots \rho_{k, l-1} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k, l-1}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{k, m+k+1}^{-1} \rho_{k, m+k}^{-1} \rho_{k, m+k-1}^{-1} C_{k, m}^{-1} . \tag{31}
\end{align*}
$$

Using equations (27), (29) and (31), we see that:

$$
\begin{align*}
\rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{l-k, 0} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{l-k, 0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1}= & \rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{l-k-1,0} C_{k, l-k} \rho_{k, l-1} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k, l-1}^{-1} C_{k, l-k}^{-1} \rho_{l-k-1,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1} \\
= & C_{k, l-k} \rho_{1,0} \cdots \rho_{l-k-2,0}\left(\rho_{l-k-1,0} \rho_{k, l-1} \rho_{k, l} \rho_{k, l-1}^{-1} \rho_{l-k-1,0}^{-1}\right) \\
& \rho_{l-k-2,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1} C_{k, l-k}^{-1} \\
= & C_{k, l-k} \cdots C_{k, 1} E_{k, k, l-1} \rho_{k, l} E_{k, k, l-1}^{-1} C_{k, 1}^{-1} \cdots C_{k, l-k}^{-1} \\
= & \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{l-k+1, k}^{-1} D_{1, k} \rho_{k, 0} E_{k, k, l-1} \rho_{k, l} E_{k, k, l-1}^{-1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{1, k}^{-1} \\
& D_{l-k+1, k} \rho_{k, 0} \tag{32}
\end{align*}
$$

Combining (28) and (32), and using the relation $D_{l-k+2, k} D_{l-k+1, k}^{-1}=\rho_{k, l-k+1}^{-1}$, we obtain:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Theta \rho_{k, l} \Theta^{-1}=\rho_{l-k+1,0}\left(\rho_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} D_{1, k} \rho_{k, 0} E_{k, k, l-1} \rho_{k, l} E_{k, k, l-1}^{-1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{1, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l-k+1}\right) \rho_{l-k+1,0}^{-1} \tag{33}
\end{equation*}
$$

In (33), it remains to conjugate by $\rho_{l-k+1,0}$. Using relations (I), we have:

$$
\rho_{l-k+1,0} \rho_{k, m} \rho_{l-k+1,0}^{-1}= \begin{cases}\rho_{k, m} & \text { if } m=0 \text { or if } l-k+2 \leq m \leq k-1  \tag{34}\\ C_{k, l-k+1} \rho_{k, m} C_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} & \text { if } 1 \leq m \leq l-k \text { or if } k \leq m \leq l-1 \\ C_{k, l-k+1} & \text { if } m=l-k+1\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{l-k+1,0} \rho_{k, m} \rho_{l-k+1,0}^{-1}=C_{k, l-k+1} E_{k, k, l-1}^{-1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{1, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l} D_{1, k} \rho_{k, 0} E_{k, k, l-1} C_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} \text { if } m=l \tag{35}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the definition of $C_{k, l-k+1}$, we have $\rho_{k, 0} C_{k, l-k+1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1}=D_{l-k+2, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l-k+1} D_{l-k+2, k}$, and together with (33), (34) and (35) it follows that:

$$
\Theta \rho_{k, l} \Theta^{-1}=C_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} \cdot C_{k, l-k+1} \rho_{k, 1} \cdots \rho_{k, l-k} C_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} . C_{k, l-k+1} \cdot \rho_{k, l-k+2} \cdots \rho_{k, k-1} \cdot \rho_{k, 0}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& C_{k, l-k+1} E_{k, k, l-1} C_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} \cdot C_{k, l-k+1} E_{k, k, l-1}^{-1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} D_{1, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l} D_{1, k} \rho_{k, 0} E_{k, k, l-1} C_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} \cdot \\
& C_{k, l-k+1} E_{k, k, l-1}^{-1} C_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} \cdot \rho_{k, 0}^{-1} \cdot \rho_{k, k-1}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{k, l-k+2}^{-1} \cdot C_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} \cdot \\
& C_{k, l-k+1} \rho_{k, l-k}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{k, 1}^{-1} C_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} \cdot C_{k, l-k+1} \\
= & \rho_{k, 1} \cdots \rho_{k, l-k} D_{l-k+2, k}\left(\rho_{k, 0} C_{k, l-k+1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1}\right) D_{1, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l} D_{1, k}\left(\rho_{k, 0} C_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} \rho_{k, 0}^{-1}\right) . \\
& D_{l-k+2, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l-k}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{k, 1}^{-1} \\
= & \rho_{k, 1} \cdots \rho_{k, l-k} D_{l-k+2, k}\left(D_{l-k+2, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l-k+1} D_{l-k+2, k}\right) D_{1, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l} D_{1, k} . \\
& \left(D_{l-k+2, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} D_{l-k+2, k}\right) D_{l-k+2, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l-k}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{k, 1}^{-1} \\
= & \left(\rho_{k, 1} \cdots \rho_{k, l-k} \rho_{k, l-k+1} D_{l-k+2, k}\right) D_{1, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l} D_{1, k}\left(D_{l-k+2, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l-k+1}^{-1} \rho_{k, l-k}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{k, 1}^{-1}\right) \\
= & D_{1, k} \cdot D_{1, k}^{-1} \rho_{k, l} D_{1, k} \cdot D_{1, k}^{-1}=\rho_{k, l} .
\end{aligned}
$$

We have thus shown that $\Theta$ commutes with each of the generators $\rho_{k, l}$, of $G_{n}$, where $1 \leq k \leq n$ and $0 \leq l \leq 2 k-2$, and so we conclude that $\Theta \in Z\left(G_{n}\right)$ for all $n \in \mathbb{N}$.

It remains to prove that $Z\left(G_{n}\right)=\left\langle\Theta_{n}\right\rangle$. The proof is similar to that for $P_{n}$. If $n=1$ then $G_{1}=\left\langle\Theta_{1}\right\rangle$ from Proposition 19, so the result holds. Assume by induction that $Z\left(G_{n-1}\right)=\left\langle\Theta_{n-1}\right\rangle$ for some $n \geq 2$, let $x \in Z\left(G_{n}\right)$, and consider the short exact sequence (17). Since $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}$ is surjective, $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}(x) \in Z\left(G_{n-1}\right)$, and so by induction, there exists $l \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}(x)=\Theta_{n-1}^{l}$. From the definition of $q_{n}$, we have $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\left(\rho_{i, 0}\right)=\rho_{i, 0}$ if $1 \leq i \leq n-1$ and $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\left(\rho_{n, 0}\right)=1$, thus $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\left(\Theta_{n}\right)=\Theta_{n-1}$. Since $\Theta_{n} \in Z\left(G_{n}\right), x \Theta_{n}^{-l} \in \operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\right) \cap Z\left(G_{n}\right)$, so $x \Theta_{n}^{-l} \in Z\left(\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(q_{n}\right) \#\right)\right)$. Thus $x \Theta_{n}^{-l}$ is trivial because $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\right)$ is a free group of rank $2 n-1$. It follows that $x \in\left\langle\Theta_{n}\right\rangle$, and this completes the proof of the proposition.

REMARK 21 . As we already mentioned, the section $\left(s_{n+1}\right)_{\#}: G_{n} \longrightarrow G_{n+1}$ gives rise to a decomposition of $G_{n}$ as an iterated semi-direct product of the form $\mathbb{F}_{2 n-1} \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{2 n-3} \rtimes\right.$ $\left.\left(\cdots \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{3} \rtimes \mathbb{Z}\right) \cdots\right)\right)$. We may choose a different section for $\left(q_{n+1}\right)_{\#}$ so that $\left\langle\Theta_{n}\right\rangle$ appears as a direct factor of $G_{n}$ as follows. Let $s_{n+1}^{\prime}: F_{n}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C) \longrightarrow F_{n+1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$ be the map defined by $s_{n+1}^{\prime}\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}\right)=\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}, y_{n+1}\right)$, where the point $y_{n+1} \in C$ belongs to the segment between $y_{n}$ and $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ and is sufficiently close to $y_{n}$. The induced homomorphism $\left(s_{n+1}^{\prime}\right)_{\#}: G_{n} \longrightarrow G_{n+1}$ sends $\rho_{n, 0}$ to $\rho_{n, 0} \rho_{n+1,0}$, and $\Theta_{n}$ to $\Theta_{n+1}$. As above, $G_{n}$ may be decomposed as an iterated semi-direct product of free groups, but by Proposition 20, it is of the form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{n} \cong \mathbb{F}_{2 n-1} \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{2 n-3} \rtimes\left(\cdots \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{5} \rtimes \mathbb{F}_{3}\right) \cdots\right)\right) \times \mathbb{Z}, \tag{36}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the $\mathbb{Z}$-factor is generated by $\Theta_{n}$. We will make use of this section to prove Proposition 4 at the end of Section 5.4.

A decomposition of $G_{n}$ as a direct sum one of whose factors is $\mathbb{Z}$ may also be obtained without reference to a section by using the following lemma.

Lemma 22. Let $F, G$ and $H$ be groups, let $\alpha: F \longrightarrow G \oplus H$ be a surjective homomorphism, and let $\widetilde{G}$ be a subgroup of $Z(F)$ such that the restriction of $\alpha$ to $\widetilde{G}$ is an isomorphism onto $G$. Then $F=\widetilde{G} \oplus \alpha^{-1}(H)$.

Proof. First of all, we claim that $F$ is generated by $\widetilde{G} \cup \alpha^{-1}(H)$. To see this, let $x \in F$. Then there exist $g \in G$ and $h \in H$ such that $\alpha(x)=g h$. Thus there exists a (unique)
$\widetilde{g} \in \widetilde{G}$ such that $\alpha(\widetilde{g})=g$. Thus $\alpha\left(\widetilde{g}^{-1} x\right)=h$, and hence $\widetilde{g}^{-1} x \in \alpha^{-1}(H)$. So there exists $\widetilde{h} \in \alpha^{-1}(H)$ such that $x=\widetilde{g} \widetilde{h}$, which proves the result. This decomposition is unique, since if there exist $\widetilde{g}_{1} \in \widetilde{G}$ and $\widetilde{h}_{1} \in \alpha^{-1}(H)$ such that $x=\widetilde{g}_{1} \cdot \widetilde{h}_{1}$ then $\alpha(x)=$ $\alpha(\widetilde{g}) \alpha(\widetilde{h})=\alpha\left(\widetilde{g}_{1}\right) \alpha\left(\widetilde{h}_{1}\right)$, and since $\alpha(\widetilde{g}), \alpha\left(\widetilde{g}_{1}\right) \in G$ and $\alpha(\widetilde{h}), \alpha\left(\widetilde{h}_{1}\right) \in H$, it follows that $\alpha(\widetilde{g})=\alpha\left(\widetilde{g}_{1}\right)$, and so $\widetilde{g}=\widetilde{g}_{1}$ by the bijectivity of $\left.\alpha\right|_{\widetilde{G}}$, from which we deduce also that $\widetilde{h}=\widetilde{h}_{1}$. In particular, we have $\widetilde{G} \cap \alpha^{-1}(H)=\{e\}$. Now $\widetilde{G}$ is normal in $F$ since $\widetilde{G}$ is a subgroup of $Z(F)$, and $\alpha^{-1}(H)$ is normal in $F$ because $H$ is normal in $G \oplus H$ and $\alpha$ is surjective. We conclude that $F=\widetilde{G} \oplus \alpha^{-1}(H)$.

Proposition 23. For all $n \in \mathbb{N}$, there exists a subgroup $H_{n}$ of $G_{n}$ such that $G_{n}=H_{n} \oplus\left\langle\Theta_{n}\right\rangle$.
Proof. If $n=1$ then $G_{1}=\left\langle\rho_{1,0}\right\rangle=\left\langle\Theta_{1}\right\rangle$, and it suffices to take $H_{1}$ to be the trivial group. So suppose that the result holds for $n-1$, where $n \geq 2$, so there exists a subgroup $H_{n-1}$ of $G_{n-1}$ for which $G_{n-1}=H_{n-1} \oplus\left\langle\Theta_{n-1}\right\rangle$. The homomorphism $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}: G_{n} \longrightarrow G_{n-1}$ of equation (17) is surjective, and as we saw at the end of the proof of Proposition 20, $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\left(\Theta_{n}\right)=\Theta_{n-1}$, so $\left.\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\right|_{\left\langle\Theta_{n}\right\rangle}:\left\langle\Theta_{n}\right\rangle \longrightarrow\left\langle\Theta_{n-1}\right\rangle$ is an isomorphism. Further, $\left\langle\Theta_{n}\right\rangle=$ $Z\left(G_{n}\right)$ by Proposition 20, and the result follows from Lemma 22 by taking $\widetilde{G}=\left\langle\Theta_{n}\right\rangle$ and $H_{n}=\left(\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\right)^{-1}\left(H_{n-1}\right)$.

## 5 The boundary homomorphism for $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$

In all of this section, $M$ will be $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. Set $n_{0}=3$ (resp. $n_{0}=2$ ) if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ), and let $n \geq n_{0}$. By Theorem $5, \pi_{2}\left(F_{n}(M)\right)$ is trivial. Considering the tail of the exact sequence (20) and using the homotopy equivalence $g_{n}: E_{n} \longrightarrow F_{n}(M)$, we obtain the following exact sequence:

$$
\begin{equation*}
1 \longrightarrow \pi_{2}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right) \xrightarrow{\partial_{n}} \pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right) \xrightarrow{\left(g_{n} \circ j_{n}\right) \#} P_{n}(M) \xrightarrow{\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\#}} \pi_{1}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right) \longrightarrow 1, \tag{37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\partial_{n}=\partial_{n, 2}$ is the associated boundary homomorphism. If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ then this sequence is short exact. The aim of this section is to describe completely $\partial_{n}$. In Section 5.1, we first describe explicit generators of $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\right)$ and $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right)$ that will be used in the rest of the paper. In Section 5.2, we exhibit homotopy equivalences between $I_{c}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$, and $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime}$ in Lemma 26. In Section 5.3, we analyse the case $n=n_{0}$, the main results being Theorem 29, which describes the relation between certain elements of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$, and Corollary 30 , which makes explicit the boundary homomorphism $\partial_{n_{0}}$. In Section 5.4, we then use the results of Section 5.3 to study the case $n>n_{0}$, and to prove Theorem 3. Corollary 33 describes the boundary homomorphism $\partial_{n}$, and generalises Corollary 30. We shall make use of the notation defined in Section 3.1. Recall that $\pi: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ denotes the universal covering, and that $\tau: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ is the antipodal map.

### 5.1 Geometric representatives of generators of $\pi_{1}(\Omega(M))$

We follow the notation of Section 3.1. For $i \in\{1,2,3\}$, let $p_{i}: \mathbb{R}^{3} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R}$ denote projection onto the $i^{\text {th }}$ coordinate. Taking $n=n_{0}$, the basepoint $W_{n_{0}}$ is $\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$ (resp.
$\left.\left(x_{0}, z_{0}\right)\right)$ if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$. If $u \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \pm \widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$, we shall identify $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right), c_{u}\right)$ with $\pi_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}, u\right)$, and $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right), c_{\pi(u)}\right)$ with $\pi_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}, \pi(u)\right)$ in the usual way. In this section, we define explicit geometric representatives of generators of $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right), u\right)$ and of $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right), c_{\pi(u)}\right)$, and we prove two lemmas that shall be used in what follows.

Let $\Pi_{0}$ be the tangent plane to $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ at $\widetilde{x}_{0}$, and let $D$ be the straight line of equation $\left\{\begin{array}{l}x=1 \\ y=0\end{array}\right.$ contained in $\Pi_{0}$. For $t \in I$, let $\Pi_{t}$ be the plane given by rotating $\Pi_{0}$ about $D$ through an angle $t \pi$, and let $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}=\mathbb{S}^{2} \cap \Pi_{t}$. We choose the orientation and parametrisation so that:
(Xa) for all $s \in(0,1), p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)<0$ if $t \in\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right)$, and $p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)>0$ if $t \in\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1\right)$.
$(X b)$ for all $t \in(0,1), p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)<0$ if $s \in\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right)$ and $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)>0$ if $s \in\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1\right)$.
$(X c)$ for all $t, s \in I, p_{i}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)=p_{i}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(1-s)\right)$ for $i=1,2$, and $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)=$ $-p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(1-s)\right)$.
$(X d)$ for all $t, s \in I, p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)=-p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}(s)\right)$, and $p_{i}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)=p_{i}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}(s)\right)$ for $i=1,3$.
(Xe) for all $t \in I, p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)>0$ if $s \in\left[0, \frac{1}{4}\right)$, and $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}(s)\right)<0$ if $s \in\left(\frac{1}{4}, \frac{1}{2}\right]$.
For each $t \in I, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}$ is a loop based at $\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 0}=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1}=c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}$, and for each $\widetilde{w} \in \mathbb{S}^{2} \backslash\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}\right\}$, there exist unique values $t, s \in(0,1)$ for which $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)=\widetilde{w}$. Observe also that:

- from condition $(\mathrm{Xb}), p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)=0$ for all $t \in I$, so the loop $\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)_{t \in I}$ is the great circle lying in the $x y$-plane.
- by conditions $\left(\mathrm{X}_{\mathrm{c}}\right)$ and $(\mathrm{Xe})$, for all $t \in I, p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)>0$ if $s \in\left[0, \frac{1}{4}\right) \cup\left(\frac{3}{4}, 1\right]$, and $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}(s)\right)<0$ if $s \in\left(\frac{1}{4}, \frac{3}{4}\right)$.

Consider the rotation $R$ about the straight line of equation $x=z$ and $y=0$ by an angle $\pi$. The matrix of $R$ in the standard basis of $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ is $\left(\begin{array}{ccc}0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0\end{array}\right)$. For all $t \in I$, let $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}=R\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\right)$. It follows from the above conditions on $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}$ that:
(Za) for all $s \in(0,1), p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}(s)\right)>0$ if $t \in\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right)$, and $p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}(s)\right)<0$ if $t \in\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1\right)$.
(Zb) for all $t \in(0,1), p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}(s)\right)<0$ if $s \in\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right)$ and $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}(s)\right)>0$ if $s \in\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1\right)$.
$(Z c)$ for all $t, s \in I, p_{i}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}(s)\right)=p_{i}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}(1-s)\right)$ for $i=2,3$, and $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}(s)\right)=$ $-p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\tilde{z}_{0}, t}(1-s)\right)$.
$(Z d)$ for all $t, s \in I, p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}(s)\right)=-p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}(s)\right)$, and $p_{i}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}(s)\right)=p_{i}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}(s)\right)$ for $i=1,3$.
(Ze) for all $t \in I, p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}(s)\right)>0$ if $s \in\left[0, \frac{1}{4}\right)$, and $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}(s)\right)<0$ if $s \in\left(\frac{1}{4}, \frac{1}{2}\right]$.
In particular:

- by condition $(\mathrm{Zb}), p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)=0$, so the loop $\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)_{t \in I}$ is the great circle lying in the $y z$-plane.
- by conditions $(\mathrm{Zc})$ and $(\mathrm{Ze})$, for all $t \in I, p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{Z}_{0}, t}(s)\right)>0$ if $s \in\left[0, \frac{1}{4}\right) \cup\left(\frac{3}{4}, 1\right]$, and $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}(s)\right)<0$ if $s \in\left(\frac{1}{4}, \frac{3}{4}\right)$.
The loop $\widetilde{\omega}_{u, t}$ is illustrated in Figure 8 for $u \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$ and small values of $t$. We also


Figure 8: The loops $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}$ and $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}$ for small values of $t$. The dotted lines indicate that the loops are on the 'hidden' side of the sphere.
set:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{\omega}_{-u, t}=-\widetilde{\omega}_{u, 1-t .} . \tag{38}
\end{equation*}
$$

If $u \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$, then $\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{u, t}\right)_{t \in I}$ is a geometric representative of a generator, which we shall denote by $\tilde{\lambda}_{u}$, of $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right), c_{u}\right)$. The fact that the covering map $\pi$ induces an isomorphism on the $\pi_{2}$-level implies that $\left(\pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{u, t}\right)_{t \in I}$ is a geometric representative of a generator of $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right), c_{\pi(u)}\right)$ that we denote by $\lambda_{\pi(u)}$. Note that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{\pi\left(-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)}=\left[\left(\pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\pi \circ\left(-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\right)\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}^{-1}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=-\lambda_{\pi\left(\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)} \tag{39}
\end{equation*}
$$

using (38). If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ), each direct factor of $\pi_{1}\left(\prod_{1}^{n_{0}} \Omega(M), W_{n_{0}}\right)$ will be identified with the corresponding group $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right), c_{u}\right)$ (resp. $\left.\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right), c_{\pi(u)}\right)\right)$. If $u \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$ (resp. $\left.u \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}\right)$, let $\widetilde{\delta}_{u}=\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{u}\right)$ (resp. $\delta_{\pi(u)}=\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\lambda_{\pi(u)}\right)$ in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$.

Lemma 24. With the above notation:
(a) if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, the loop $\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\left(\operatorname{resp} .\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I^{\prime}}\right.$ $\left.\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right)$ is a geometric representative in $I_{n_{0}}$ of $\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}\left(\right.$ resp. of $\left.\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, \widetilde{\delta}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)$.
(b) if $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, the loop $\left(x_{0}, z_{0}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\left(x_{0}, z_{0}, c_{x_{0}}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{ \pm \tilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right)$ is a geometric representative in $I_{n_{0}}$ of $\delta_{x_{0}}$ (resp. of $\pm \delta_{z_{0}}$ ).

Proof. The result is a consequence of the application of the construction given in the proof of Lemma 13 to the lower fibration of (11), and equation (39).

Lemma 25. Let $u \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$. Then in $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right), c_{u}\right),\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{u, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{u, 1-t}^{-1}\right)_{t \in I}\right]$.
Proof. First suppose that $u=\widetilde{x}_{0}$, and for $\theta \in[0, \pi]$, let $R_{\theta}^{\prime}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \cos \theta & -\sin \theta \\ 0 & \sin \theta & \cos \theta\end{array}\right)$. Then for all $t \in I, R_{0}^{\prime}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\right)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}$, and using conditions (Xc) and (Xd), for all $t, s \in I$, we have:

$$
R_{\pi}^{\prime}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)=\left(\begin{array}{c}
p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right) \\
-p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right) \\
-p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{c}
p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}(s)\right) \\
p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}(s)\right) \\
-p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}(s)\right)
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{c}
p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}(1-s)\right) \\
p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}(1-s)\right) \\
p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}(1-s)\right)
\end{array}\right)
$$



Figure 9: The homeomorphism $J_{j}$.

$$
=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}(1-s)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}^{-1}(s)
$$

So $R_{\pi}^{\prime}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\right)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}^{-1}$, from which we deduce the result for $\widetilde{x}_{0}$ using the homotopy $\left(R_{\theta}^{\prime}\right)_{\theta \in[0, \pi]}$. If $u=\widetilde{z}_{0}$, by the first part, $R \circ R_{0}^{\prime}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\right)=R\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\right)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}$ and $R \circ$ $R_{\pi}^{\prime}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\right)=R\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}^{-1}\right)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}^{-1}$ for all $t \in I$, and the result then follows as in the case of $\widetilde{x}_{0}$.

### 5.2 Construction of intermediate homotopy fibres

Once more, the notation will be that defined in Section 3.1. We start by introducing some other notation that will be used in the rest of the paper. Let $n \geq n_{0}$, and let $j \in\left\{0,1, \ldots, n-n_{0}\right\}$. Let $J_{j}: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be the orientation-preserving homeomorphism defined by:

$$
J_{j}(\theta, \varphi)= \begin{cases}\left(\theta, \varphi+\left(\frac{\pi}{2}-\varphi\right)\left(\frac{j}{j+1}\right)\right) & \text { if } \varphi \geq 0  \tag{40}\\ \left(\theta, \varphi+\left(\frac{\pi}{2}+\varphi\right)\left(\frac{j}{j+1}\right)\right) & \text { if } \varphi<0\end{cases}
$$

Note that $J_{0}=\operatorname{Id}_{\mathbb{S}^{2}}, J_{j}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}\right)=\widetilde{x}_{j}, J_{j}$ sends the equator $(\varphi=0)$ to the circle of equation $\varphi=\frac{\pi}{2}\left(\frac{j}{j+1}\right)$, leaves the longitudes invariant, and fixes the poles (see Figure 9). If $t \in I$, let $h_{j, t}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be the path defined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{j, t}(r)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1+r}{2}\right) \text { for all } r \in I \text {, where } \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}=J_{j} \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t} . \tag{41}
\end{equation*}
$$

The subspace $\mathbb{M}$ of $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ defined in Section 3.1 is contractible. Let us define two explicit contractions $H_{1}: \mathbb{M} \times I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $H_{2}: \mathbb{D} \times I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ as follows. If $v \in \mathbb{D}$, let $v=$ $(\theta, \varphi)$.
(a) To define $H_{1}$, we separate the cases $\varphi \geq 0$ and $\varphi<0$ :
(i) suppose that $\varphi \geq 0$. If $v=\widetilde{x}_{0}$ then set $H_{1}(v, r)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$ for all $r \in I$. If $v \neq \widetilde{x}_{0}$ then there exist $t \in(0,1)$ and $s \in\left[\frac{1}{2}, 1\right)$, both unique, such that $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)=v$. We then set:

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{1}(v, r)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s(1-r)+r) \text { for all } r \in I . \tag{42}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) suppose that $\varphi<0$. Notice that $(\theta, 0)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0},(2 \pi-\theta) / 2 \pi}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$, and that $\min \left(\frac{-2 \varphi}{\pi}, \frac{1}{2}\right) \in$ $(0,1)$. We set:

$$
H_{1}(v, r)= \begin{cases}\left(\theta, \varphi\left(1-\frac{r}{\min \left(\frac{-2 \varphi}{\pi}, \frac{1}{2}\right)}\right)\right) & \text { if } 0 \leq r \leq \min \left(\frac{-2 \varphi}{\pi}, \frac{1}{2}\right) \\ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0},(2 \pi-\theta) / 2 \pi\left(\frac{1+r-2 \min \left(\frac{-2 \varphi}{\pi}, \frac{1}{2}\right)}{2\left(1-\min \left(\frac{-2 \varphi}{\pi}, \frac{1}{2}\right)\right)}\right)} \quad \text { if } \min \left(\frac{-2 \varphi}{\pi}, \frac{1}{2}\right)<r \leq 1\end{cases}
$$

One may check that $H_{1}$ is continuous, and that $H_{1}(v, 0)=v$ and $H_{1}(v, 1)=\tilde{x}_{0}$ for all $v \in \mathbb{M}$.

Geometrically, $H_{1}$ contracts $\mathbb{M}$ onto $\widetilde{x}_{0}$, first along the longitudes in the lower hemisphere, then along the paths $\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}(s)\right)_{s \in\left[\frac{1}{2}, 1\right]}$ in the upper hemisphere.
(b) $H_{2}$ is defined by $H_{2}(v, r)=H_{2}((\theta, \varphi), r)=\left(\theta,(1-r) \varphi+\frac{r \pi}{2}\right)$. Geometrically, $H_{2}$ contracts $\mathbb{D}$ onto $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ along the longitudes.
If $v \in \mathbb{M}$ (resp. $v \in \mathbb{D}$ ), we define $h_{v}^{(1)}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.h_{v}^{(2)}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{v}^{(1)}(r)=H_{1}(v, r) \text { and } h_{v}^{(2)}(r)=H_{2}(v, r) . \tag{43}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe that $h_{v}^{(1)}$ (resp. $h_{v}^{(2)}$ ) is a path that joins $v$ to $\widetilde{x}_{0}$ (resp. to $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ ) via the homotopy $H_{1}$ (resp. $H_{2}$ ). Let $\Psi_{j}: \mathbb{M} \times I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be the homotopy defined by $\Psi_{j}(\widetilde{x}, t)=$ $J_{j}\left(H_{1}\left(J_{j}^{-1}(\widetilde{x}), t\right)\right)$ using (40), and for $\widetilde{x} \in \mathbb{M}$, let $\psi_{\tilde{x}}^{(j)}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be the path defined by $\psi_{\tilde{x}}^{(j)}(r)=\Psi_{j}(\widetilde{x}, r)$ that joins $\widetilde{x}$ to $\widetilde{x}_{j}$. Note that $\psi_{\tilde{x}}^{(0)}=h_{\tilde{x}}^{(1)}$, and that for all $r \in I$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
\psi_{\widetilde{w}_{\tilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)}^{(j)}(r) & =\Psi_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), r\right)=J_{j}\left(H_{1}\left(J_{j}^{-1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), r\right)\right) \\
& =J_{j}\left(H_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), r\right)\right)=J_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1+r}{2}\right)\right) \text { by equations (41) and (42) } \\
& =h_{j, t}(r) \text { by equation (41). } \tag{44}
\end{align*}
$$

Let $\alpha_{c}: I_{c} \longrightarrow I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ be the pointed map defined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha_{c}\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n-1}, \omega_{1}, \ldots, \omega_{n-1}\right)=\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n-1}, \widehat{\psi}_{y_{1}}^{(1)} * \omega_{1}, \ldots, \widehat{\psi}_{y_{n-1}}^{(n-1)} * \omega_{n-1}\right) \tag{45}
\end{equation*}
$$

where:

$$
\widehat{\psi}_{y_{i}}^{(i)}= \begin{cases}h_{y_{n-1}}^{(2)} & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2} \text { and } i=n-1  \tag{46}\\ \psi_{y_{i}}^{(i-1)} & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Note that $\alpha_{c}$ satisfies $h_{n}^{\prime \prime} \circ \alpha_{c}(u, \mu)=u$ for all $(u, \mu) \in I_{c}$, and so diagram (15) is commutative up to homotopy using Remark 18. From the definition of $\alpha_{n}^{\prime}: I_{n}^{\prime} \longrightarrow I_{n}$, (14) and (45), it follows that:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n-1}, \omega_{1}, \ldots, \omega_{n-1}\right)= \\
& \quad\left(\widehat{\pi}\left(y_{1}\right), \ldots, \widehat{\pi}\left(y_{n-1}\right), w_{n}, \widehat{\pi} \circ\left(\widehat{\psi}_{y_{1}}^{(1)} * \omega_{1}\right), \ldots, \widehat{\pi} \circ\left(\widehat{\psi}_{y_{n-1}}^{(n-1)} * \omega_{n-1}\right), c_{w_{n}}\right) . \tag{47}
\end{align*}
$$

The homomorphism $J_{j}: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ defined by equation (40) and the covering map $\pi: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ induce isomorphisms on the $\pi_{2}$-level, so by equation $(41),\left(\hat{\pi} \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\right)_{t \in I}$
is a geometric representative of a generator of $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right), c_{\widetilde{x}_{j}}\right)$ (resp. of $\left.\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right), c_{x_{j}}\right)\right)$ that we denote by $\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}}\left(\right.$ resp. by $\left.\lambda_{x_{j}}\right)$. Identifying $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right), c_{\widetilde{x}_{j}}\right)$ (resp. $\left.\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right), c_{x_{j}}\right)\right)$ with $\pi_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}, \widetilde{x}_{j}\right)\left(\operatorname{resp} . \pi_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}, x_{j}\right)\right)$ as usual, we may thus take:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}}, \ldots, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}}, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\tilde{z}_{0}}, \widetilde{\lambda}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)\left(\operatorname{resp} .\left(\lambda_{x_{0}}, \lambda_{x_{1}}, \ldots, \lambda_{x_{n-2}}, \lambda_{z_{0}}\right)\right) \tag{48}
\end{equation*}
$$

to be a basis of the free Abelian group $\pi_{2}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ (resp. of $\pi_{2}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} \mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ ). For each $v \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{x}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{x}_{n-3}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.v \in\left\{x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}, z_{0}\right\}\right)$, let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widetilde{\delta}_{v}=\partial_{n}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{v}\right)\left(\text { resp. } \delta_{v}=\partial_{n}\left(\lambda_{v}\right)\right) . \tag{49}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Remark 18 and the proof of Theorem 1, the homotopy fibres $I_{c}, I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime}$ have the same homotopy type. We are now able to exhibit explicit homotopy equivalences between them, which will allow us to describe the images of certain elements of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{c}\right)$ by the induced isomorphisms.

Lemma 26.
(a) The map $\alpha_{c}: I_{c} \longrightarrow I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ defined in (45) is a homotopy equivalence.
(b) The $\operatorname{map}_{\pi}: I_{n}^{\prime \prime} \longrightarrow I_{n}^{\prime}$ defined in (14) is a homotopy equivalence.
(c) With the notation of (47),

$$
g_{n} \circ j_{n} \circ \alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n-1}, \omega_{1}, \ldots, \omega_{n-1}\right)=\left(\widehat{\pi}\left(y_{1}\right), \ldots, \widehat{\pi}\left(y_{n-1}\right), w_{n}\right) .
$$

(d) For all $i=1, \ldots, n-1,\left(\alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\right)_{\#}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{w_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right)= \begin{cases}\widetilde{\delta}_{w_{i}}=\partial_{n}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{w_{i}}\right) & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2} \\ \delta_{w_{i}}=\partial_{n}\left(\lambda_{w_{i}}\right) & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2} .\end{cases}$

Proof.
(a) Let $\beta_{c}: I_{n}^{\prime \prime} \longrightarrow I_{c}$ be defined by:

$$
\beta_{c}\left(v_{1}, \ldots, v_{n-1}, \gamma_{1}, \ldots, \gamma_{n-1}\right)=\left(v_{1}, \ldots, v_{n-1},\left(\widehat{\psi}_{v_{1}}^{(1)}\right)^{-1} * \gamma_{1}, \ldots,\left(\widehat{\psi}_{v_{n-1}}^{(n-1)}\right)^{-1} * \gamma_{n-1}\right)
$$

Then $\alpha_{c} \circ \beta_{c} \simeq \operatorname{Id}_{I_{n}^{\prime \prime}}$ and $\beta_{c} \circ \alpha_{c} \simeq \operatorname{Id}_{I_{c}}$, so $\alpha_{c}$ and $\beta_{c}$ are mutual homotopy inverses between $I_{c}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$.
(b) If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ then $\alpha_{\pi}$ is the identity, and the result is clear. So suppose that $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. Define $\beta_{\pi}: I_{n}^{\prime} \longrightarrow I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ by:

$$
\beta_{\pi}\left(v_{1}, \ldots, v_{n-1}, l_{1}, \ldots, l_{n-1}\right)=\left(\widetilde{v}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{v}_{n-1}, \widetilde{l}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{l}_{n-1}\right),
$$

where for $i=1, \ldots, n-1, \widetilde{l}_{i}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ is the lift of the path $l_{i}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ by the covering map $\pi$ such that $\widetilde{l}_{i}(1)=w_{i}^{\prime \prime}$, and $\widetilde{v}_{i}$ is given by $\widetilde{v}_{i}=\widetilde{l}_{i}(0)$. The map $\beta_{\pi}$ is well defined, since if $\left(v_{1}, \ldots, v_{n-1}\right) \in F_{n-1}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2} \backslash\left\{z_{0}\right\}\right)$ then $\left(\widetilde{v}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{v}_{n-1}\right) \in F_{n-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)$. The fact that $\pi$ is a covering map implies that $\alpha_{\pi} \circ \beta_{\pi}=\operatorname{Id}_{I_{n}^{\prime}}$ and $\beta_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{\pi}=\operatorname{Id}_{I_{n}^{\prime \prime}}$, so $\alpha_{\pi}$ and $\beta_{\pi}$ are mutual homotopy inverses between $I_{n}^{\prime \prime}$ and $I_{n}^{\prime}$.
(c) This follows directly from (47) and the definition of the maps $g_{n}$ and $j_{n}$ given in Section 3.1.
(d) Let $i \in\{1, \ldots, n-1\}$. Then:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\lambda}_{w_{i}^{\prime \prime}}=\left[\left(w_{1}^{\prime \prime}, \ldots, w_{n-1}^{\prime \prime}, c_{w_{1}^{\prime \prime}}, \ldots, c_{w_{i-1}^{\prime \prime}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{w_{i}^{\prime \prime}, t}, c_{w_{i+1}^{\prime \prime}}, \ldots, c_{w_{n-1}^{\prime \prime}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{50}
\end{equation*}
$$

in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{c}\right)$. For all $j=1, \ldots, n-1, \widehat{\pi}\left(w_{j}^{\prime \prime}\right)=w_{j}$, and $\widehat{\psi}_{w_{j}^{\prime \prime}}^{j-1}=c_{w_{j}}$ using (46) and the definition of $\Psi_{j-1}$. It follows from (49), (50) and Lemma 13 that:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\right)_{\#}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{w_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right) & =\left[\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{n-1}, c_{w_{1}}, \ldots, c_{w_{i-1}}, \hat{\pi} \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{w_{i}^{\prime \prime},}, c_{w_{i+1}}, \ldots, c_{w_{n-1}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& = \begin{cases}\partial_{n}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{w_{i}}\right)=\widetilde{\delta}_{w_{i}} & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2} \\
\partial_{n}\left(\lambda_{w_{i}}\right)=\delta_{w_{i}} & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2},\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

as required.
The following proposition relates the elements that appear in (48) to an element $\widehat{\tau}_{n}$ of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right)$ that projects to the full twist braid under the homomorphism $\left(g_{n} \circ j_{n}\right)_{\#}$.
PROPOSITION 27. Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, let $n \geq n_{0}$, let $\tau_{n}: I \longrightarrow I_{c}$ be the loop in $I_{c}$ based at $W_{c}$ defined by:

$$
\tau_{n}(t)= \begin{cases}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \ldots, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{1}}, \ldots, c_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right) & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2}  \tag{51}\\ \left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \ldots, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-2}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}},{\widetilde{\widetilde{x}_{1}}}, \ldots, c_{\widetilde{x}_{n-2}}\right) & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}\end{cases}
$$

and let $\widehat{\tau}_{n}$ be the element of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right)$ defined by $\widehat{\tau}_{n}=\left[\alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\left(\tau_{n}\right)\right]$. Then $\left(g_{n} \circ j_{n}\right)_{\#}\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}\right)=$ $\Delta_{n}^{2}$, the full-twist braid of $P_{n}(M)$, and there exist unique integers $m_{0}, m_{1}, \ldots, m_{n-1} \in \mathbb{Z}$ such that:

$$
\widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2}= \begin{cases}\partial_{n}\left(m_{0} \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}+\cdots+m_{n-3} \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}}+m_{n-2} \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}+m_{n-1} \widetilde{\lambda}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right) & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2}  \tag{52}\\ \partial_{n}\left(m_{0} \lambda_{x_{0}}+\cdots+m_{n-2} \lambda_{x_{n-2}}+m_{n-1} \lambda_{z_{0}}\right) & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}\end{cases}
$$

Proof. Let $\tau_{n}$ be as defined in equation (51), and for $t \in I$, let:

$$
\left(y_{1}(t), \ldots, y_{n-1}(t)\right)= \begin{cases}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \ldots, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0}\right) & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2}  \tag{53}\\ \left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \ldots, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-2}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right) & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}\end{cases}
$$

Then $\tau_{n}(t)=\left(y_{1}(t), \ldots, y_{n-1}(t), c_{y_{1}(0)}, \ldots, c_{y_{n-1}(0)}\right)$, and using (47), we have:

$$
\begin{align*}
\widehat{\tau}_{n} & =\left[\alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c} \circ \tau_{n}\right] \\
& =\left[\left(\widehat{\pi}\left(y_{1}(t)\right), \ldots, \widehat{\pi}\left(y_{n-1}(t)\right), w_{n}, \widehat{\pi} \circ \widehat{\psi}_{y_{1}(t)}^{(1)}, \ldots, \widehat{\pi} \circ \widehat{\psi}_{y_{n-1}(t)}^{(n-1)}, c_{w_{n}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{54}
\end{align*}
$$

Using (46), (54), Lemma 26(c) and the fact that $h_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}^{(2)}=c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}$, we see that:

$$
\left(g_{n} \circ j_{n}\right)_{\#}\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}\right)= \begin{cases}{\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \ldots, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)_{t \in I}\right]} & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2} \\ {\left[\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), \pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), \ldots, \pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-2}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), z_{0}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}}\end{cases}
$$

Using the constructions of Section 5.1 and equation (41), this element may be seen to be a geometric representative of $\Delta_{n}^{2}$ in $P_{n}(M)$ (see Figure 10 for the case $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ ). In particular, $\widehat{\tau}_{n}$ is non trivial, and $\widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2} \in \operatorname{Im}\left(\partial_{n}\right)$ by exactness of (37). With respect to the basis of $\pi_{2}\left(\Pi_{1}^{n} M\right)$ given by (48), the existence and uniqueness of the integers $m_{0}, m_{1}, \ldots, m_{n-1}$ given in (52) also follows from the exactness of (37).


Figure 10: The full twist braid $\Delta_{n}^{2}$ of $P_{n}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$, which is equal to $\left(g_{n} \circ j_{n}\right)_{\#}\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}\right)$.

### 5.3 The boundary homomorphism in the case $n=n_{0}$

In this section, we assume that $n=n_{0}$, and we use of the notation of Sections 3.1 and 5.2. The aim is to describe the boundary homomorphism $\partial_{n_{0}}: \pi_{2}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n_{0}} M\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$ that arises in the exact sequence (37). It follows from Theorem 1 and the fact that $F_{1}{ }^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)=$ $F_{1}(C)$ that $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}^{n_{0}}$. In particular, $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$ is Abelian, which justifies the use of additive notation for this group in what follows. As we mentioned just after (13), if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}, \iota_{n_{0}}^{\prime \prime}=\iota_{n_{0}}^{\prime}$ and $I_{n_{0}}^{\prime \prime}=I_{n_{0}}^{\prime}$. If $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, since $n_{0}-1=1$, we have $F_{n_{0}-1}^{\langle\tau\rangle}(C)=$ $F_{n_{0}-1}(C)$. So in both cases, $F_{n_{0}-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M})=F_{n_{0}-1}(\mathbb{M})$. If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ), in Section 5.3.1, we use the explicit homotopy equivalences of Lemma 26 and Corollary 37 between $I_{c}, I_{n_{0}}^{\prime \prime}, I_{n_{0}}^{\prime}$ and $I_{n_{0}}$ to determine a generating set of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$. The main result of this section is Theorem 29 that describes the relation between the images under the boundary operator $\partial_{n_{0}}$ of the elements $\widetilde{\lambda}_{u}$ (resp. $\lambda_{u}$ ), where $u \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$ (resp. $u \in\left\{x_{0}, z_{0}\right\}$ ), and the element $\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}$ defined in Proposition 27. The proof of Theorem 29 is given in Section 5.3.2 (resp. Section 5.3.3), and the proof for $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ will make use of that for $\mathbb{S}^{2}$.

### 5.3.1 $\quad$ A basis of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$

In this section, we start by exhibiting a basis for $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$ in Proposition 28 using the structure of $I_{c}$ and the homotopy equivalences of Lemma 26 and Corollary 37. We then state Theorem 29 that describes the relations between the elements of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$ given by (49). If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ), it will suffice to determine $\widetilde{\delta}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}$ (resp. $\delta_{z_{0}}$ ) in terms of the elements of this basis. This will enable us to understand more fully the exact sequence (37).

PROPOSITION 28. If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$, a basis of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$ is given by $\left\langle\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}\right\rangle$ (resp. by $\left\langle\delta_{x_{0}}, \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}\right\rangle$ ).

Proof. As we saw above, $F_{n_{0}-1}^{G}(\mathbb{M})=F_{n_{0}-1}(\mathbb{M})$, so $I_{c}=F_{n_{0}-1}(\mathbb{M}) \times \prod_{i=1}^{n_{0}-1} \Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ by Remarks $14(\mathrm{~b})$, and a basis of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{c}\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}^{n_{0}}$ is given by $\left\{\left[\tau_{n_{0}}\right]\right\} \cup\left\{\widetilde{\lambda}_{w_{i}^{\prime \prime}}\right\}_{i=1}^{n_{0}-1}$. The


Figure 11: The $\operatorname{arcs} \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, s}$ and $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, s}^{\prime}$.
result follows by applying Lemma 26(d) and Proposition 27 to this basis, and using the fact that the homomorphism $\left(\alpha_{n_{0}}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\right)_{\#}: \pi_{1}\left(I_{c}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$ is an isomorphism by Lemma 26 and Corollary 37.

Before stating Theorem 29, we introduce some notation that will be useful in what follows. For $u \in\left\{ \pm \widetilde{x}_{0}, \pm \widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$ and for all $r, s, t \in I$, let $\Omega_{u, t, s} \Omega_{u, t, s}^{\prime}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be the families of arcs defined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Omega_{u, t, s}(r)=\widetilde{\omega}_{u, t}(s+r(1-s)) \quad \text { and } \quad \Omega_{u, t, s}^{\prime}(r)=\widetilde{\omega}_{u, t}(s(1-r)) \tag{55}
\end{equation*}
$$

The arcs $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, s}$ and $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, s}^{\prime}$ are illustrated in Figure 11. Then $\Omega_{u, t, 0}=\widetilde{\omega}_{u, t}, \Omega_{u, t, 1}^{\prime}=\widetilde{\omega}_{u, t}^{-1}$, $\Omega_{u, t, 1}=\Omega_{u, t, 0}^{\prime}=c_{u}$, and for all $s, t \in I, \Omega_{u, t, s}$ and $\Omega_{u, t, s}^{\prime}$ are subarcs of $\widetilde{\omega}_{u, t}$ that join $\widetilde{\omega}_{u, t}(s)$ to $u$. Furthermore, equations (38), (41), (42), and (43) imply that:

$$
\begin{align*}
\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}} & =h_{\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)}^{(1)}=h_{0, t}  \tag{56}\\
\Omega_{u, t, s} & =-\Omega_{-u, 1-t, s} \quad \text { and } \quad \Omega_{u, t, s}^{\prime}=-\Omega_{-u, 1-t, s}^{\prime} \tag{57}
\end{align*}
$$

Using (53), (54) and the fact that $h_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}^{(2)}=c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}$, we have:

$$
\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}= \begin{cases}{\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\tilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]} & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2}, \text { and }  \tag{58}\\ {\left[\left(\pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), z_{0}, \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]} & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}\end{cases}
$$

By Lemma 24(a) and Proposition 28, if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, the loop $\alpha_{n_{0}}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c} \circ \tau_{n_{0}}$, illustrated in Figure 12, and the images by $\alpha_{n_{0}}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}$ of the loops $\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}, c_{\tilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}$ and $\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}$ are geometric representatives of $\widetilde{\tau}_{n}, \widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}$ and $\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}$ respectively. If $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, geometric representatives of the basis elements $\left(\alpha_{c}\right)_{\#}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}\right)$ and $\left[\alpha_{c} \circ \tau_{n_{0}}\right]$ of $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ are similar in nature to those for the case $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, except that the markings on $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ should be forgotten. We now state the main result of Section 5.

THEOREM 29. In $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$, we have $2 \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}= \begin{cases}\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}+\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}-\widetilde{\delta}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}} & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2} \\ \delta_{x_{0}}+\delta_{z_{0}} & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2} .\end{cases}$


Figure 12: The loop $\alpha_{n_{0}}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c} \circ \tau_{n_{0}}$ in $I_{n_{0}}$ in the case $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$

The proof of Theorem 29 will occupy Sections 5.3.2 and 5.3.3. We first state and prove a corollary as well as a lemma that we will require for that proof.

COROLLARY 30. The boundary homomorphism $\partial_{n_{0}}: \pi_{2}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n_{0}} M\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$ of the exact sequence (37) is given by:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \partial_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{u}\right)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\widetilde{\delta}_{u} & \text { if } u \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right\} \\
\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}+\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}-2 \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}} & \text { if } u=-\widetilde{z}_{0}
\end{array} \quad \text { and if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2}\right. \text {, and } \\
& \partial_{n_{0}}\left(\lambda_{u}\right)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\delta_{u} & \text { if } u=x_{0} \\
2 \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}-\delta_{x_{0}} & \text { if } u=z_{0}
\end{array} \quad \text { and if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2} .\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

Proof of Corollary 30. With the basis of $\pi_{2}\left(\prod_{i=1}^{n_{0}} M\right)$ given by (48), the result is a consequence of (49) and Theorem 29.

To state the lemma that follows, we first give two definitions.
(a) Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, let $\widetilde{u}, \widetilde{v} \in \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be such that $(\widetilde{u}, \widetilde{v},-\widetilde{v}) \in F_{3}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$, and define:

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{n_{0}}(\widetilde{u}, \widetilde{v})=\left\{(\widetilde{z}, \lambda) \in F_{3}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right) \times\left(\prod_{1}^{3} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)^{I} \mid \lambda(0)=\widetilde{z} \text { and } \lambda(1)=(\widetilde{u}, \widetilde{v},-\widetilde{v})\right\} \tag{59}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we equip $I_{n_{0}}(\widetilde{u}, \widetilde{v})$ with the basepoint $\left(\widetilde{u}, \widetilde{v},-\widetilde{v}, c_{\widetilde{u}}, c_{\widetilde{v}}, c_{-\widetilde{v}}\right)$.
(b) Let $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, let $(u, v) \in F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$, and define:

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{n_{0}}(u, v)=\left\{(z, \mu) \in F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right) \times\left(\prod_{1}^{2} \mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)^{I} \mid \mu(0)=z \text { and } \mu(1)=(u, v)\right\} \tag{60}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we equip $I_{n_{0}}(u, v)$ with the basepoint $\left(u, v, c_{u}, c_{v}\right)$.
With the notation and choice of basepoints given in Section 3.1, if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $M=$ $\left.\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ then $I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$ (resp. $\left.I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, z_{0}\right)\right)$ coincides with $I_{n_{0}}$.
LEMMA 31. Let $\widetilde{w} \in \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be such that $p_{3}(\widetilde{w})>0$, let $\Gamma: I \times I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be a map such that for all $s, t \in I, p_{3}(\Gamma(s, t)) \geq 0, \Gamma(0, t)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$ and $\Gamma(1, t)=\Gamma(s, 0)=\Gamma(s, 1)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$, and let $\gamma_{t}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be the map defined by $\gamma_{t}(s)=\Gamma(s, t)$.
(a) Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$. Then:

$$
\left[\left(\gamma_{t}(0), \widetilde{w},-\widetilde{w}, \gamma_{t}, c_{\widetilde{w}}, c_{-\widetilde{w}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\widetilde{w}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{w},-\widetilde{w}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{w}}, c_{-\widetilde{w}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]
$$

in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{w}\right)\right)$.
(b) Let $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, and let $w=\pi(\widetilde{w})$. Then:

$$
\left[\left(\pi\left(\gamma_{t}(0)\right), w, \pi \circ \gamma_{t}, c_{w}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), w, \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{w}\right)_{t \in I}\right]
$$

in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, w\right)\right)$.

## Proof.

(a) From the conditions on $\widetilde{w}$ and $\Gamma,\left(\gamma_{t}(0), \widetilde{w},-\widetilde{w}, \gamma_{t}, c_{\widetilde{w}}, c_{-\widetilde{w}}\right) \in I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{w}\right)$ for all $t \in I$. For all $r, s, t \in I$, define $\Theta_{r}: I \times I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ by:

$$
\Theta_{r}(s, t)=\frac{r \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}(s)+(1-r) \Gamma(s, t)}{\left\|r \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}(s)+(1-r) \Gamma(s, t)\right\|^{\prime}},
$$

and let $\theta_{r, t}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be defined by $\theta_{r, t}(s)=\Theta_{r}(s, t)$. We claim that the map $\Theta_{r}$ is well defined: using equation (55), if $s=0$ then $\Theta_{r}(0, t)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$, and if $s=1$ or $t \in\{0,1\}$ then $\Theta_{r}(s, t)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$. So assume that $(s, t) \in(0,1) \times(0,1)$. Then $p_{3}(\Gamma(s, t)) \geq 0$ by hypothesis and $p_{3}\left(\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}(s)\right)>0$ from condition $(\mathrm{Xb})$ given in Section 5.1 , so $\Gamma(s, t)$ and $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}(s)$ are not antipodal, which proves the claim. In particular, $\theta_{r, t}(0)=\Theta_{r}(0, t) \notin$ $\{\widetilde{w},-\widetilde{w}\}$ and $p_{3}\left(\Theta_{r}(s, t)\right) \geq 0$ for all $r, s, t \in I$. For $r \in I$, let:

$$
\tilde{\zeta}(r)=\left(\theta_{r, t}(0), \widetilde{w},-\widetilde{w}, \theta_{r, t}, c_{\widetilde{w}}, c_{-\widetilde{w}}\right)_{t \in I} \text { in } I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{w}\right) .
$$

Since $\left(\theta_{r, t}(0), \widetilde{w},-\widetilde{w}, \theta_{r, t}, c_{\widetilde{w}}, c_{-\widetilde{w}}\right)=\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{w},-\widetilde{w}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, c_{\widetilde{w}^{w}}, c_{-\widetilde{w}}\right)$ for $t \in\{0,1\}, \widetilde{\xi}(r)$ is a loop in $I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{w}\right)$ for all $r \in I$, and $\xi$ defines a based homotopy in $I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{w}\right)$ between the $\operatorname{loops} \tilde{\xi}(0)=\left(\gamma_{t}(0), \widetilde{w},-\widetilde{w}, \gamma_{t}, c_{\widetilde{w}}, c_{-\widetilde{w}}\right)_{t \in I}$ and $\tilde{\xi}(1)=\left(\widetilde{w}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{w},-\widetilde{w}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{w}}, c_{-\widetilde{w}}\right)_{t \in I}$ as required.
(b) For $r \in I$, let $\xi^{\prime}(r)=\left(\pi\left(\theta_{r, t}(0)\right), w, \pi \circ \theta_{r, t}, c_{w}\right)_{t \in I}$. From the proof of part (a), $\xi^{\prime}$ defines a based homotopy in $I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, w\right)$ between the loops $\xi^{\prime}(0)=\left(\pi\left(\gamma_{t}(0)\right), w, \pi \circ\right.$ $\left.\gamma_{t}, c_{w}\right)_{t \in I}$ and $\tilde{\zeta}^{\prime}(1)=\left(\pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), w, \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{w}\right)_{t \in I^{\prime}}$ and the result follows.

### 5.3.2 The proof of Theorem 29 in the case $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$

Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$. This section is devoted to proving Theorem 29 that describes the relation in $I_{n_{0}}$ between $\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}$ and the $\widetilde{\delta}_{u}$, where $u \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right\}$.

Proof of Theorem 29 in the case $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$. By taking their sum, it suffices to show that the following two equalities in $I_{n_{0}}$ hold:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}=\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}+\xi_{n_{0}}  \tag{61}\\
& \xi_{n_{0}}=-\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}+\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}-\widetilde{\delta}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}} \tag{62}
\end{align*}
$$

where:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\xi_{n_{0}}=\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1}{2}}^{\prime}, \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right] . \tag{63}
\end{equation*}
$$

We start by proving (61). For all $\alpha, t \in I$, let:

$$
\begin{equation*}
w_{t, \alpha}=\left(\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1-\alpha}{2}}(0), \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0), \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0), \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1-\alpha}{2}}, \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}, \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}\right) . \tag{64}
\end{equation*}
$$

The three components of $w_{t, \alpha}$, namely the first and fourth coordinates, the second and fifth coordinates, and the third and sixth coordinates, as $t$ increases, are illustrated in Figure 13. We claim that $w_{t, \alpha} \in I_{n_{0}}$. To see this, by (55), the arc $\left(\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1-\alpha}{2}}\right)_{t \in I}$ (resp.


Figure 13: The three components of $w_{t, \alpha}$ based at $\widetilde{x}_{0}$ (the first row), $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ (the second row), and $-\widetilde{z}_{0}$ (the third row), as $t$ increases from 0 to 1 . To obtain $w_{t, \alpha}$, the figures in each column should be superimposed. The left-hand column represents $\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}$, and the righthand column represents $\widetilde{\delta}_{n_{0}}+\xi_{n_{0}}$.
$\left.\left(\Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I},\left(\Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right)$ joins $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1-\alpha}{2}}(0)\left(\operatorname{resp} . \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0), \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)\right)$ to $\widetilde{x}_{0}(\operatorname{resp}$.
to $\left.\widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$. So prove the claim, it remains to show that $\left(\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1-\alpha}{2}}(0), \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0), \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)\right)$ belongs to $F_{3}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$. First, using equation (57), $\Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)=-\Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)$ for all $t, \alpha \in$ $I$, so $\Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0) \neq \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)$. We now prove that for all $t, \alpha \in I, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1-\alpha}{2}}(0) \neq$ $\Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)$, or equivalently $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right) \neq-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)$, by considering the following cases:
(a) if $t \in\{0,1\}$ then $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$ and $-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)=-\widetilde{z}_{0}$ by conditions (Xa) and ( Za ).
(b) Suppose that $t \in(0,1)$. If $\alpha=0$ then $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$ and $-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)=-\widetilde{z}_{0}$, but $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) \neq-\widetilde{z}_{0}$ by condition $(\mathrm{Xb})$. If $\alpha=1$ then $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$ and $-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)=$ $-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$, but $-\widetilde{\omega}_{\tilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right) \neq \widetilde{x}_{0}$ by condition $(\mathrm{Zb})$.
(c) suppose that $t \in(0,1) \backslash\left\{\frac{1}{2}\right\}$ and $\alpha \in(0,1)$. By conditions (Xa) and (Za), we see that $p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right)\right) \cdot p_{2}\left(-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)\right)<0$, in particular $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right) \neq-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)$.
(d) suppose that $t=\frac{1}{2}$ and $\alpha \in(0,1)$.
(i) If $\alpha \in\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\alpha \in\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1\right)\right)$ then $\left.p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}} \frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right)\right)<0$ and $p_{1}\left(-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)\right)>0$ by conditions $(\mathrm{Xe})$ and $(\mathrm{Zb})$ (resp. $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right)\right)<0$ and $p_{3}\left(-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)\right)>0$ by conditions $(\mathrm{Xb})$ and $(\mathrm{Ze}))$, so $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right) \neq-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)$.
(ii) If $\alpha=\frac{1}{2}$ then $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1}{4}\right)\right)=0$ and $p_{1}\left(-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1}{4}\right)\right)>0$ by conditions $(\mathrm{Xe})$ and $(\mathrm{Zb})$, so $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1}{4}\right) \neq-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1}{4}\right)$.
Finally, let us show that $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1-\alpha}{2}}(0) \neq \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)$ for all $t, \alpha \in I$, or equivalently that $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right) \neq \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)$, by considering the following cases:
(a) if $t \in\{0,1\}$ then $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$ and $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)=\widetilde{z}_{0}$.
(b) if $t \in(0,1)$ and $\alpha=0$ then $\widetilde{z}_{0}=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}(0) \neq \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$ by condition $(\mathrm{Xb})$.
(c) suppose that $t \in(0,1)$ and $\alpha \in\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right]$ (resp. $\left.\alpha \in\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1\right]\right)$. Then $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right)\right)<$ 0 and $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)\right) \geq 0$ by conditions $(\mathrm{Xb})$ and $(\mathrm{Ze})$ (resp. $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right)\right)>0$ and $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)\right) \leq 0$ by conditions $(\mathrm{Xe})$ and $\left.(\mathrm{Zb})\right)$, so $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1-\alpha}{2}\right) \neq \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{\alpha}{2}\right)$.
This proves the claim that $w_{t, \alpha}$ lies in $I_{n_{0}}$.
For all $\alpha, t \in I$, we define:

$$
\begin{equation*}
v_{t, \alpha}=\left(\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{2-\alpha}{2}}(0), \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0), \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0), \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{2-\alpha}{2}}, \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}, \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}\right) . \tag{65}
\end{equation*}
$$

The three components of $v_{t, \alpha}$, namely the first and fourth coordinates, the second and fifth coordinates, and the third and sixth coordinates, as $t$ increases, are illustrated in Figure 14. We claim that $v_{t, \alpha} \in I_{n_{0}}$. By (55), the arc $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{2-\alpha}{2}}$ (resp. $\Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}$, $\Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}$ ) joins $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{2-\alpha}{2}}(0)$ (resp. $\left.\Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0), \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)\right)$ to $\widetilde{x}_{0}$ (resp. $\left.\widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$. It thus remains to show that $\left(\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{2-\alpha}{2}}(0), \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1+\alpha}{\prime}}^{\prime}(0), \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)\right)$ belongs to $F_{3}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$. First, for all $t, \alpha \in I, \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)=-\Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)$ by equation (57), so $\Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0) \neq$ $\Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)$. We now show that $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{2-\alpha}{2}}(0) \neq \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)$ for all $t, \alpha \in I$, or equivalently, that $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right) \neq \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)$, by considering the following cases.
(a) If $t \in\{0,1\}$ then $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$ and $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)=\widetilde{z}_{0}$.


Figure 14: The three components of $v_{t, \alpha}$ based at $\widetilde{x}_{0}$ (the first row), $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ (the second row), and $-\widetilde{z}_{0}$ (the third row), as $t$ increases from 0 to 1 . To obtain $v_{t, \alpha}$, the figures in each column should be superimposed. The left-hand column represents $\xi_{n_{0}}$, and the righthand column represents $-\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}+\widetilde{\delta}_{z_{0}}-\widetilde{\delta}_{-z_{0}}$.
(b) If $t \in(0,1)$ and $\alpha=0$ (resp. $\alpha=1)$ then $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right)=\widetilde{x}_{0} \neq \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)$ by condition $(\mathrm{Zb})\left(\operatorname{resp} . \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)=\widetilde{z}_{0} \neq \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right)\right.$ by condition $(\mathrm{Xb})$ ).
(c) If $\alpha \in(0,1)$ and $t \in(0,1) \backslash\left\{\frac{1}{2}\right\}$ then $p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right)\right) \cdot p_{2}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)\right)<0$ by conditions (Xa) and (Za), in particular $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right) \neq \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)$.
(d) suppose that $t=\frac{1}{2}$ and $\alpha \in(0,1)$.
(i) if $\alpha \in\left(0, \frac{1}{2}\right)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\alpha \in\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1\right)\right)$ then $\left.p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}} \frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right)\right)>0$ and $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)\right)<0$ by conditions $(\mathrm{Xb}),(\mathrm{Zc})$ and $(\mathrm{Ze})\left(\right.$ resp. $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right)\right)<0$ and $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)\right)>0$ by conditions $(\mathrm{Xc}),(\mathrm{Xe})$ and $(\mathrm{Zb}))$, so $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right) \neq \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)$.
(ii) if $\alpha=\frac{1}{2}$ then $\left.p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}, \frac{1}{2}} \frac{3}{4}\right)\right)>0$ and $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{3}{4}\right)\right)=0$ by conditions $(\mathrm{Xb})$ and $(\mathrm{Ze})$, so $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{3}{4}\right) \neq \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{3}{4}\right)$.

Finally, we show that $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{2-\alpha}{2}}(0) \neq \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0)$ for all $t, \alpha \in I$, or equivalently, that $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right) \neq-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)$, by considering the following cases:
(a) if $\alpha \in\left[0, \frac{1}{2}\right)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\alpha \in\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1\right]\right)$ then $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right)\right)>0$ and $p_{1}\left(-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)\right) \leq 0$ by conditions $(\mathrm{Xc}),(\mathrm{Xe})$ and $(\mathrm{Zb})\left(\right.$ resp. $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right)\right) \geq 0$ and $p_{3}\left(-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)\right)<$ 0 by conditions $(\mathrm{Xb}),(\mathrm{Zc})$ and $(\mathrm{Ze}))$, so $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{2-\alpha}{2}\right) \neq-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1+\alpha}{2}\right)$.
(b) suppose that $\alpha=\frac{1}{2}$. If $t \in\{0,1\}$ then $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{3}{4}\right)=\widetilde{x}_{0} \neq-\widetilde{z}_{0}=-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{3}{4}\right)$, and if $t \in(0,1)$ then $p_{3}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{3}{4}\right)\right)>0$ and $p_{3}\left(-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{3}{4}\right)\right) \leq 0$ by conditions $(\mathrm{Xb}),(\mathrm{Zc})$ and $(\mathrm{Ze})$, so $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{3}{4}\right) \neq-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{3}{4}\right)$.
This completes the proof of the claim that $v_{t, \alpha} \in I_{n_{0}}$.
For all $\alpha \in I$ and $t \in\{0,1\}$, we have $w_{t, \alpha}=v_{t, \alpha}=\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)$, hence $\left(w_{t, \alpha}\right)_{t \in I}$ and $\left(v_{t, \alpha}\right)_{t \in I}$ are families of based homotopic loops in $I_{n_{0}}$. In particular, $\left[\left(w_{t, 0}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(w_{t, 1}\right)_{t \in I}\right]$ in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$, so by Lemma 24(a), and (55), (58), (63) and (64), we have:

$$
\begin{align*}
\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}= & {\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(w_{t, 0}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(w_{t, 1}\right)_{t \in I}\right] }  \tag{66}\\
= & {\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]+} \\
& {\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1}{2}}^{\prime}, \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}+\widetilde{\xi}_{n_{0}} } \tag{67}
\end{align*}
$$

which yields (61). This equality is illustrated by the first and third columns of Figure 13. Similarly, $\left[\left(v_{t, 0}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(v_{t, 1}\right)_{t \in I}\right]$ in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$. Further, by (58), we see that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}=\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\tilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{68}
\end{equation*}
$$

so:

$$
\begin{align*}
\tilde{\xi}_{n_{0}}= & {\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \Omega_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1}{2}}^{\prime}, \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(v_{t, 0}\right)_{t \in I}\right] }  \tag{69}\\
= & {\left[\left(v_{t, 1}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1}{2}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}^{-1} \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}^{-1}\right)_{t \in I}\right] } \\
= & {\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)_{t \in I}\right]+} \\
& {\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]+\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}^{-1}\right)_{t \in I}\right] } \\
= & -\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}+\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}, c-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)_{t \in I}\right]+\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}^{-1}\right)_{t \in I}\right]  \tag{70}\\
= & -\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}+\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}-\widetilde{\delta}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}
\end{align*}
$$

by (55), (63), (65) and (68), and Lemmas 24(a) and 25, which yields (62). This equality is illustrated by the first and third columns of Figure 14. This completes the proof of Theorem 29 in the case $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$.

### 5.3.3 The proof of Theorem 29 in the case $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$

In this section, we use the constructions of the proof of Theorem 29 in the case $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ to prove the result in the case $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$.
Proof of Theorem 29 in the case $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. Let $I_{2}$ denote the homotopy fibre of the map $\iota_{2}: F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right) \longrightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{2} \mathbb{R} P^{2}$. Let $\widetilde{I}_{2}$ be the set of elements $\left(\widetilde{x}, \widetilde{y}, \lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}\right)$ of $F_{2}^{\langle\tau\rangle}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right) \times$
$\left(\prod_{1}^{2} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)^{I}$ that satisfy the following conditions:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\lambda_{1}(0), \lambda_{2}(0)\right)=(\widetilde{x}, \widetilde{y}), \lambda_{1}(1) \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0},-\widetilde{x}_{0}\right\} \text { and } \lambda_{2}(1) \in\left\{\widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}\right\} \tag{71}
\end{equation*}
$$

and let $\widetilde{I}_{3}$ be the subset of $I_{3}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$ (defined by (59)) consisting of elements of the form $\left(\widetilde{x}, \widetilde{y},-\widetilde{y}, \lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2},-\lambda_{2}\right)$. Then for $(i, j) \in\{(2,5),(3,6)\}$, the map $\rho_{i, j}: \widetilde{I}_{3} \longrightarrow \widetilde{I}_{2}$ given by forgetting the $i^{\text {th }}$ and $j^{\text {th }}$ coordinates is well defined. Also, the following map:

$$
\left\{\begin{aligned}
\tilde{\pi}: F_{2}^{\langle\tau\rangle}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right) \times\left(\prod_{1}^{2} \mathbb{S}^{2}\right)^{I} & \longrightarrow F_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right) \times\left(\prod_{1}^{2} \mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)^{I} \\
\left(\widetilde{x}, \widetilde{y}, \lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}\right) & \longmapsto\left(\pi(\widetilde{x}), \pi(\widetilde{y}), \pi \circ \lambda_{1}, \pi \circ \lambda_{2}\right)
\end{aligned}\right.
$$

induced by the projection $\pi: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2}$, restricts to a map from $\widetilde{I}_{2}$ to $I_{2}$, that we also denote by $\tilde{\pi}$. For all $t, \alpha \in I$, let:

$$
\begin{align*}
& w_{t, \alpha}^{\prime}=\left(\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1-\alpha}{2}}(0), \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0), \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1-\alpha}{2}}, \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}\right), \\
& v_{t, \alpha}^{\prime}=\left(\Omega_{-\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{2-\alpha}{2}}(0), \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}(0), \Omega_{-\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{2-\alpha}{2}}, \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1+\alpha}{2}}^{\prime}\right) \text { and } \\
& \zeta_{2}=\left[\left(x_{0}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), c_{x_{0}}, \pi \circ \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \text { in } \pi_{1}\left(I_{2}\right) . \tag{72}
\end{align*}
$$

By equations (57), (64) and (65), for all $t, \alpha \in I$, we have $w_{t, \alpha}, v_{t, \alpha} \in \widetilde{I}_{3}, w_{t, \alpha}^{\prime}=\rho_{2,5}\left(w_{t, \alpha}\right) \in$ $\widetilde{I}_{2}$ and $v_{t, \alpha}^{\prime}=-\rho_{3,6}\left(v_{t, \alpha}\right) \in \widetilde{I}_{2}$, so $\widetilde{\pi}\left(w_{t, \alpha}^{\prime}\right)$ and $\widetilde{\pi}\left(v_{t, \alpha}^{\prime}\right)$ belong to $I_{2}$. In particular, composing the homotopy $\left(w_{t, \alpha}\right)_{t \in I}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\left(v_{t, \alpha}\right)_{t \in I}\right)$ in $\widetilde{I}_{3}$ (and so in $I_{3}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)$ ) with the map $\widetilde{\pi} \circ \rho_{2,5}$ (resp. $\left.\tilde{\pi} \circ\left(-\rho_{3,6}\right)=\tilde{\pi} \circ \rho_{3,6}\right)$ yields the homotopy $\left(\tilde{\pi} \circ w_{t, \alpha}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}$ (resp. $\left.\left(\tilde{\pi} \circ v_{t, \alpha}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right)$ in $I_{2}$. Now by (38) and (55), we have:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[\left(\Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, 1}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}^{-1}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, 1-t}^{-1}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(-\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{73}
\end{equation*}
$$

in $\pi_{2}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}, c_{-\tilde{z}_{0}}\right)$. Applying $\tilde{\pi} \circ \rho_{2,5}$ (resp. $\tilde{\pi} \circ \rho_{3,6}$ ) to equations (66) and (67) (resp. (69) and (70)) and using equations (57), (58), (72) and (73) as well as Lemma 24(b), in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{2}\right)$ we obtain respectively:

$$
\begin{align*}
\widehat{\tau}_{2} & =\left[\left(\pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), z_{0}, \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\widetilde{\pi} \circ w_{t, 0}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\widetilde{\pi} \circ w_{t, 1}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& =\left[\left(x_{0}, z_{0}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]+\left[\left(x_{0}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), c_{x_{0}}, \pi \circ \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& =\delta_{x_{0}}+\zeta_{2}, \text { and }  \tag{74}\\
\zeta_{2} & =\left[\left(x_{0}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), c_{x_{0}}, \pi \circ \Omega_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\widetilde{\pi} \circ v_{t, 0}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\widetilde{\pi} \circ v_{t, 1}^{\prime}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& =\left[\left(\pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), z_{0}, \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, 1-t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]+\left[\left(x_{0}, z_{0}, c_{x_{0}}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& =-\widehat{\tau}_{2}+\delta_{z_{0}} . \tag{75}
\end{align*}
$$

Summing equations (74) and (75) yields the result in the case $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$.
REMARK 32. Within the framework of this section $\left(M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right.$ and $\left.n_{0}=2\right)$, it is important for us to know that the homomorphism $\left(\alpha_{2}^{\prime}\right)_{\#}: \pi_{1}\left(I_{2}^{\prime}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{2}\right)$ is an isomorphism. This is a consequence of Corollary 37. However, we may give an alternative proof
of this fact without using Corollary 37 as follows. First note that $\pi_{1}\left(I_{2}^{\prime}\right) \cong \pi_{1}\left(I_{c}\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}^{2}$ by Lemma 26(a) and (b), and that $\pi_{1}\left(I_{2}\right) \cong \mathbb{Z}^{2}$ by Theorem 1 (b) and Proposition 19. Arguing as in the proof of Proposition 28, one sees that $\operatorname{Im}\left(\left(\alpha_{2}^{\prime}\right)_{\#}\right)=\left\langle\delta_{x_{0}}, \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}\right\rangle$. Since $\mathbb{Z}^{2}$ is Hopfian, it thus suffices to prove that $\left(\alpha_{2}^{\prime}\right)_{\#}$ is surjective. To do so, consider the long exact sequence (37) for $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ and $n=2$. Now $P_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ is isomorphic to the quaternion group of order 8 , and the full twist $\Delta_{2}^{2}$ is its unique element of order 2 [VB]. By exactness, it follows that $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(\hat{\iota}_{2}\right)_{\#}\right)=\left\langle\Delta_{2}^{2}\right\rangle$, and that the following sequence:

$$
\begin{equation*}
1 \longrightarrow \pi_{2}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2} \times \mathbb{R} P^{2}\right) \xrightarrow{\partial_{2}} \pi_{1}\left(I_{2}\right) \xrightarrow{\left(g_{2} \circ j_{2}\right) \#} \operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(\widehat{\iota_{2}}\right)_{\#}\right) \longrightarrow 1 . \tag{76}
\end{equation*}
$$

is exact. By Proposition 27, $\left(g_{2} \circ j_{2}\right)_{\#}\left(\widehat{\tau}_{2}\right)=\Delta_{2}^{2}$, and using standard properties of short exact sequences applied to (76), Theorem 29, and the fact that $\partial_{2}\left(\lambda_{x_{0}}\right)=\delta_{x_{0}}$ and $\partial_{2}\left(\lambda_{z_{0}}\right)=\delta_{z_{0}}$, we see that $\pi_{1}\left(I_{2}\right)=\left\langle\delta_{x_{0}}, \delta_{z_{0}}, \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}\right\rangle=\left\langle\delta_{x_{0}}, \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}\right\rangle$, and thus the homomorph$\operatorname{ism}\left(\alpha_{2}^{\prime}\right)_{\#}: \pi_{1}\left(I_{2}^{\prime}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{2}\right)$ is surjective as required.

### 5.4 The boundary homomorphism in the general case

In this section, we determine the boundary homomorphism in the general case using the conclusions of Theorem 29 and Corollary 30 in the case $n=n_{0}$. Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ or $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, suppose that $n>n_{0}$, and let $j \in\left\{0,1, \ldots, n-n_{0}\right\}$. We take the basepoint of $F_{n}(M)$ and $\Pi_{1}^{n} M$ to be $W_{n}$ as defined in Section 3.1. Let $v_{j}: F_{n}(M) \longrightarrow F_{n_{0}}(M)$ and $\widetilde{v}_{j}: \prod_{1}^{n} M \longrightarrow \prod_{i=1}^{n_{0}} M$ denote projection onto the $(j+1)^{\text {st }},(n-1)^{\text {th }}$ and $n^{\text {th }}$ coordinates (resp. $(j+1)^{\text {st }}$ and $n^{\text {th }}$ coordinates). We thus have a commutative diagram:


In order that the maps $v_{j}$ and $\widetilde{v}_{j}$ be pointed, the basepoint of $F_{n_{0}}(M)$ and $\prod_{i=1}^{n_{0}} M$ is taken to be $v_{j}\left(W_{n}\right)=\widetilde{v}_{j}\left(W_{n}\right)$. Applying [A, pages 91 and 108], we obtain the following commutative diagram of fibrations:

where $\widehat{v}_{j}: E_{n} \longrightarrow E_{n_{0}}$ is the projection induced by $v_{j}$. The basepoints of $E_{n}$ and $I_{n}$, (resp. $E_{n_{0}}$ and $I_{n_{0}}$ ) are those obtained from $\prod_{1}^{n} M$ (resp. $\prod_{i=1}^{n_{0}} M$ ) using the convention given in the first paragraph of Section 3.1. Taking the long exact sequence in homotopy of (77) as in equation (37), we obtain the following commutative diagram of exact sequences:



Figure 15: The homeomorphism $\widetilde{K}_{j}$ and the paths $\zeta_{t}$.

The rows of (78) are short exact if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$. With the notation of equations (59) and (60), $I_{n_{0}}$ here denotes $I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{j}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$ (resp. $I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{j}, z_{0}\right)$ ). We now prove Theorem 3 , which expresses $\widehat{\tau}_{n}$ in terms of the elements that appear in (48), and generalises Theorem 29. Since $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right)$ is non Abelian if $n \geq 4$ (resp. $n \geq 3$ ), we write $\widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2}$ rather than $2 \widehat{\tau}_{n}$.

Proof of Theorem 3. Let $j \in\left\{0,1, \ldots, n-n_{0}\right\}$. By equation (52) and the commutativity of diagram (78), in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right)$ we have:

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\left.\widehat{v}_{j}\right|_{I_{n}}\right) \#\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2}\right) & =\partial_{n_{0}} \circ\left(\widehat{v}_{j}\right)_{\# 2}\left(m_{0} \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}+\cdots+m_{n-3} \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}}+m_{n-2} \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}+m_{n-1} \widetilde{\lambda}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right) \\
& =m_{j} \partial_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}}\right)+m_{n-2} \partial_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\tilde{z}_{0}}\right)+m_{n-1} \partial_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right) \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2}, \text { and }  \tag{79}\\
\left(\left.\widehat{v}_{j}\right|_{I_{n}}\right) \#\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2}\right) & =\partial_{n_{0}} \circ\left(\widehat{v}_{j}\right)_{\# 2}\left(m_{0} \lambda_{x_{0}}+\cdots+m_{n-2} \lambda_{x_{n-2}}+m_{n-1} \lambda_{z_{0}}\right) \\
& =m_{j} \partial_{n_{0}}\left(\lambda_{x_{j}}\right)+m_{n-1} \partial_{n_{0}}\left(\lambda_{z_{0}}\right) \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2} . \tag{80}
\end{align*}
$$

From (44), (46), (53), (54) and the fact that $h_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}^{(2)}=c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}$, we obtain:

$$
\left(\left.\widehat{v}_{j}\right|_{I_{n}}\right) \#\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}\right)= \begin{cases}{\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, h_{j, t}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]} & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2}  \tag{81}\\ {\left[\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), z_{0}, \pi \circ h_{j, t}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]} & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}\end{cases}
$$

Let $\widetilde{K}_{j}: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ denote the rotation of angle $\frac{\pi j}{2(j+1)}$ about the $y$-axis, illustrated in Figure 15 , that sends $\widetilde{x}_{j}$ to $\widetilde{x}_{0}$, let $K_{j}: \mathbb{R} P^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ be the homeomorphism of $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ induced by $\widetilde{K}_{j}$, let $\widetilde{z}_{j}=\widetilde{K}_{j}\left(\widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$, and let $z_{j}=\pi\left(\widetilde{z}_{j}\right)$. The homeomorphisms $\widetilde{K}_{j}$ and $K_{j}$ induce isomorphisms:

$$
\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}: \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{j}\right)\right) \text { and }\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}: \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, z_{j}\right)\right)
$$

respectively, that satisfy:

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left(\left.\widehat{v}_{j}\right|_{I_{n}}\right)_{\#}\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}\right)\right)=\left[\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), \widetilde{z}_{j},-\widetilde{z}_{j}, \widetilde{K}_{j} \circ h_{j, t}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{j}} c_{-\widetilde{z}_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2} \\
\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left(\left.\widehat{v}_{j}\right|_{I_{n}}\right)_{\#}\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}\right)\right)=\left[\left(K_{j}\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)\right), z_{j}, K_{j} \circ \pi \circ h_{j, t}, c_{z_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2} \tag{83}
\end{array}
$$

by equation (81). For $t \in I$, consider the path $\zeta_{t}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ defined by:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta_{t}(r)=\frac{\max \left(0,\left(\frac{1}{2}-r\right)\right) \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)+r \widetilde{K}_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\max \left(\frac{1}{2}, r\right)\right)\right)}{\left\|\max \left(0,\left(\frac{1}{2}-r\right)\right) \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)+r \widetilde{K}_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\max \left(\frac{1}{2}, r\right)\right)\right)\right\|} \quad \text { for all } r \in I \tag{84}
\end{equation*}
$$

We claim that $\zeta_{t}$ is well defined. To see this, first note that if $r \in\left[\frac{1}{2}, 1\right]$ then $\zeta_{\frac{1}{2}}(r)=$ $\widetilde{K}_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, \frac{1}{2}}(r)\right)$. We may thus assume that $r \in\left[0, \frac{1}{2}\right)$, so that $\widetilde{K}_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\max \left(\frac{1}{2}, r\right)\right)\right)=$ $\widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)$ using (41). If $t \in\{0,1\}$ then $\zeta_{t}=c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}$. If $t=\frac{1}{2}$, conditions (Xa), (Xb) and $(\mathrm{Xe})$ imply that $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)=-\widetilde{x}_{0}$. Hence $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$ and $\widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)$ are non antipodal, for otherwise we would have $\widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j}\left(-\widetilde{x}_{0}\right)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$, which is impossible since $\widetilde{x}_{0}$ is the only preimage of itself by the homeomorphism $\widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j}$. So suppose that $t \notin\left\{0, \frac{1}{2}, 1\right\}$, and let $v=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$. Now $p_{2}(v), p_{2}\left(J_{j}(v)\right)$, and $p_{2}\left(\widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j}(v)\right)$ are all non zero and of the same sign, so $v$ and $\widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j}(v)$ are non antipodal also, and this proves the claim. Each path $\zeta_{t}$ joins $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$ to $\widetilde{x}_{0}$ via $\widetilde{K}_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)$ by arcs that lie in the upper hemisphere. The subpaths $\left(\zeta_{t}(r)\right)_{r \in\left[0, \frac{1}{2}\right]}$ are illustrated in the right-hand part of Figure 15. From (84), one may check that $\zeta_{t}$ satisfies the hypotheses of Lemma 31, where we take $\Gamma(r, t)=\zeta_{t}(r)$ for all $t, r \in I$, and $\widetilde{w}=\widetilde{z}_{j}$, from which we conclude that:

$$
\begin{align*}
{\left[\left(\zeta_{t}(0), \widetilde{z}_{j},-\widetilde{z}_{j}, \zeta_{t}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{j}}, c_{-\tilde{z}_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] } & =\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{j},-\widetilde{z}_{j}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{j}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \text { and }  \tag{85}\\
{\left[\left(\pi\left(\zeta_{t}(0)\right), z_{j}, \pi \circ \zeta_{t}, c_{z_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] } & =\left[\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), z_{j}, \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{86}
\end{align*}
$$

in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{j}\right)\right)$ and in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, z_{j}\right)\right)$ respectively. Setting $\eta_{t, r}(s)=\zeta_{t}((1-s) r+s)$ for all $t, r, s \in I$, we have $\eta_{t, 0}=\zeta_{t}, \eta_{t, r}(0)=\zeta_{t}(r), \eta_{t, r}(1)=\zeta_{t}(1)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$, and using (41) and (84), we obtain:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\eta_{t, \frac{1}{2}}(s)=\zeta_{t}\left(\frac{1+s}{2}\right)=\widetilde{K}_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1+s}{2}\right)\right)=\widetilde{K}_{j} \circ h_{j, t}(s) \text { for all } s \in I, \text { so } \eta_{t, \frac{1}{2}}=\widetilde{K}_{j} \circ h_{j, t} \tag{87}
\end{equation*}
$$

We claim that $\eta_{t, r}(0) \notin\left\{\widetilde{z}_{j},-\widetilde{z}_{j}\right\}$ for all $r \in\left[0, \frac{1}{2}\right]$. To see this, first recall that $\eta_{t, r}(0)=$ $\zeta_{t}(r)$ lies in the upper hemisphere, so $\eta_{t, r}(0) \neq-\widetilde{z}_{j}$. If $t \notin\left\{0, \frac{1}{2}, 1\right\}$ then since $\eta_{t, 0}(0)=$ $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$ and $\eta_{t, \frac{1}{2}}(0)=\widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)$, we deduce from above that $p_{2}\left(\eta_{t, 0}(0)\right)$ and $p_{2}\left(\eta_{t, \frac{1}{2}}(0)\right)$ are non zero and have the same sign, which proves the claim in this case since $p_{2}\left(\widetilde{z}_{j}\right)=0$. If $t \in\{0,1\}$ then $\eta_{t, r}(0)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$ for all $r \in\left[0, \frac{1}{2}\right]$, so the claim also holds. Finally, let $t=\frac{1}{2}$. If $j=0$ then $\eta_{t, r}(0)=\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)=-\widetilde{x}_{0} \neq \widetilde{z}_{0}$ for all $r \in\left[0, \frac{1}{2}\right]$. If $j \geq 1$, then with respect to the spherical coordinates of Section 3.1, the arc $\left(\eta_{\frac{1}{2}, r}(0)\right)_{r \in I}$ joins $-\widetilde{x}_{0}$ to $\widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \frac{1}{2}}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)=\left(0, \frac{\pi}{j+1}\right)$ along the geodesic arc that avoids $\widetilde{z}_{j}=\left(0, \frac{\pi}{2(j+1)}\right)$. This completes the proof of the claim. So in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{j}\right)\right)$, we obtain:

$$
\begin{aligned}
{\left[\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), \widetilde{z}_{j},-\widetilde{z}_{j}, \widetilde{K}_{j} \circ h_{j, t}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{j}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] } & =\left[\left(\eta_{t, \frac{1}{2}}(0), \widetilde{z}_{j},-\widetilde{z}_{j}, \eta_{t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{j}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& =\left[\left(\eta_{t, 0}(0), \widetilde{z}_{j},-\widetilde{z}_{j}, \eta_{t, 0}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{j}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$



Figure 16: The homeomorphism $\varphi_{w}: \mathbb{D}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{D}^{2}$.

$$
\begin{equation*}
=\left[\left(\widetilde{w}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{j},-\widetilde{z}_{j}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{j}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{88}
\end{equation*}
$$

using equations (41), (84), (85) and (87), and in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, z_{j}\right)\right)$, we see that:

$$
\begin{align*}
{\left[\left(K_{j}\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)\right), z_{j}, K_{j} \circ \pi \circ h_{j, t}, c_{z_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] } & =\left[\left(\pi\left(\eta_{t, \frac{1}{2}}(0)\right), z_{j}, \pi \circ \eta_{t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& =\left[\left(\pi\left(\eta_{t, 0}(0)\right), z_{j}, \pi \circ \eta_{t, 0,}, c_{z_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& =\left[\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), z_{j}, \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{89}
\end{align*}
$$

using also equation (86). Consequently,

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left(\left.\widehat{v}_{j}\right|_{I_{n}}\right) \#\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}\right)\right)=\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{j},-\widetilde{z}_{j}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{j}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2}, \text { and } \\
\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left(\left.\widehat{v}_{j}\right|_{I_{n}}\right) \#\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}\right)\right)=\left[\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), z_{j}, \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2} \tag{91}
\end{array}
$$

by equations (82), (83), (88) and (89) in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{j}\right)\right)$ and $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, z_{j}\right)\right)$ respectively.
Let $H_{u}=\left\{(x, y, z) \in \mathbb{S}^{2} \mid z \geq 0\right\}$ denote the upper hemisphere of $\mathbb{S}^{2}$, let $\mathbb{D}^{2}$ denote the closed unit 2-disc in $\mathbb{R}^{2}$ whose centre is the origin, and let $P: H_{u} \longrightarrow \mathbb{D}^{2}$ be the homeomorphism defined by $P(x, y, z)=(x, y)$ whose inverse is given by $P^{-1}(x, y)=$ $\left(x, y, \sqrt{1-x^{2}-y^{2}}\right)$ for all $(x, y) \in \mathbb{D}^{2}$. For $w \in[0,1)$, let $\varphi_{w}: \mathbb{D}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{D}^{2}$ be the homeomorphism defined by:

$$
\varphi_{w}(x, y)= \begin{cases}\left(\frac{w}{w-1}(1-|x|-|y|)+x, y\right) & \text { if }|x|+|y| \leq 1 \\ (x, y) & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Note that $\varphi_{0}=\operatorname{Id}_{\mathbb{D}^{2}}$ and $\varphi_{w}(w, 0)=(0,0)$. If $u \in[-1,1]$, the effect of $\varphi_{w}$ is to map linearly the segment joining $(0,1)$ (resp. $(0,-1))$ to $(u, 0)$ to the segment joining $(0,1)$ (resp. $(0,-1)$ ) to $\left(\frac{w}{w-1}(1-|u|)+u, 0\right)$ as in Figure 16 . We define $\Phi_{w}: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ by:

$$
\Phi_{w}(x, y, z)= \begin{cases}P^{-1} \circ \varphi_{w} \circ P(x, y, z) & \text { if }(x, y, z) \in H_{u} \\ -\Phi_{w}(-(x, y, z)) & \text { if }(x, y, z) \in \mathbb{S}^{2} \backslash H_{u}\end{cases}
$$



Figure 17: The homeomorphism $\widetilde{f}_{j}$.
Observe that $\Phi_{0}=\operatorname{Id}_{\mathbb{S}^{2}}, \Phi_{w}$ is a homeomorphism that fixes $\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)_{t \in I}$ pointwise, and that satisfies $\Phi_{w}\left(w, 0, \sqrt{1-w^{2}}\right)=\widetilde{z}_{0}$. Now $\left.\widetilde{z}_{j}=\left(\sin \left(\frac{\pi j}{2(j+1)}\right), 0, \cos \left(\frac{\pi j}{2(j+1)}\right)\right)\right)$ in Cartesian coordinates, and so $p_{1}\left(\widetilde{z}_{j}\right)=\sin \left(\frac{\pi}{2}\left(\frac{j}{j+1}\right)\right)$ belongs to $[0,1)$. We define the homeomorphism $\widetilde{f}_{j}: \mathbb{S}^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ by $\widetilde{f}_{j}=\Phi_{p_{1}\left(\widetilde{z}_{j}\right)}$ (see Figure 17). Then $\widetilde{f}_{j}$ satisfies $\widetilde{f}_{j}\left(\widetilde{z}_{j}\right)=$ $P^{-1} \circ \varphi_{p_{1}\left(\widetilde{z}_{j}\right)}\left(p_{1}\left(\widetilde{z}_{j}\right), 0\right)=\widetilde{z}_{0}$. By definition, $\widetilde{f}_{j}$ is $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-equivariant with respect to $\tau$, so induces a homeomorphism $f_{j}: \mathbb{R} P^{2} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2}$ that fixes $\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)$ pointwise for each $t \in I$, and that satisfies $f_{j}\left(z_{j}\right)=z_{0}$. Let $\gamma_{t}: I \longrightarrow \mathbb{S}^{2}$ be the arc defined by $\gamma_{t}=\widetilde{f}_{j} \circ$ $\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}$. By condition ( Xb ) and equation (55), $p_{3}\left(\Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}(s)\right) \geq 0$ for all $s \in I$. Since $\Phi_{w}$ leaves $H_{u}$ invariant, we see that $p_{3}\left(\gamma_{t}(s)\right) \geq 0$ for all $s, t \in I$. Further, $\gamma_{t}(0)=$ $\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)$, and $\gamma_{t}(1)=\gamma_{0}(s)=\gamma_{1}(s)=\widetilde{x}_{0}$ for all $t, s \in I$, so Lemma 31 applies to $\gamma_{t}$, where $\widetilde{w}$ is taken to be $\widetilde{z}_{0}$. The homeomorphism $\widetilde{f}_{j}$ (resp. $f_{j}$ ) induces an isomorphism $\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#}: \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{j}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)\right)\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#}: \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, z_{j}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, z_{0}\right)\right)\right)$ for which:

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left(\left.\widehat{v}_{j}\right|_{I_{n}}\right) \#\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}\right)\right) & =\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{j},-\widetilde{z}_{j}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{j}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]\right) \\
& =\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& =\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right), \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}} \tag{92}
\end{align*}
$$

using equations (58) and (90) and Lemma 31(a) if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, and:

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left(\left.\widehat{v}_{j}\right|_{I_{n}}\right)_{\#}\left(\widehat{\tau}_{n}\right)\right) & =\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left[\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), z_{j}, \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{j}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]\right) \\
& =\left[\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), z_{0}, f_{j} \circ \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& =\left[\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), z_{0}, \pi \circ \widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \\
& =\left[\left(\pi\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right), z_{0}, \pi \circ \Omega_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t, \frac{1}{2}}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}} \tag{93}
\end{align*}
$$

using equations (58) and (91) and Lemma 31(b) if $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$.

We now compute the image of the terms on the right-hand side of equation (79) (resp. equation (80)) by the isomorphism $\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}: I_{n_{0}} \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)\right)$ (resp. by the isomorphism $\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}: I_{n_{0}} \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, z_{0}\right)\right)$. Applying Lemma 24 , we have:

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)\right) & =\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right) \\
& =\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{j}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{j}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]\right) \\
& =\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \widetilde{K}_{j} \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{94}
\end{align*}
$$

if $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$, and:

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\lambda_{z_{0}}\right)\right) & =\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\delta_{z_{0}}\right) \\
& =\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left[\left(x_{j}, z_{0}, c_{x_{j}}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right]\right) \\
& =\left[\left(x_{0}, z_{0}, c_{x_{0}}, \pi \circ \widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \widetilde{K}_{j} \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{95}
\end{align*}
$$

if $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. Now the two homeomorphisms $\widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j}:\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}, \widetilde{x}_{0}\right) \longrightarrow\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}, \widetilde{x}_{0}\right)$ and $\widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \widetilde{K}_{j}:\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right) \longrightarrow\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)$ preserve orientation, so:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[\left(\widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j} \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \text { and }\left[\left(\widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \widetilde{K}_{j} \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{96}
\end{equation*}
$$

in $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right), c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}\right)$ and $\pi_{1}\left(\Omega\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right), c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)$ respectively. It follows from equations (94) and (96), and from Lemma 24(a) that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)\right)=\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, c_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}} \tag{97}
\end{equation*}
$$

in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)\right)$. Exchanging the rôles of $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ and $-\widetilde{z}_{0}$ in this argument yields:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)\right)=\widetilde{\delta}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}} . \tag{98}
\end{equation*}
$$

Applying $\pi_{\#}: \pi_{1}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}, z_{0}\right)$ to (96), we see that $\left(\left[\left(\pi \circ \widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \widetilde{K}_{j} \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right]\right)=$ $\left[\left(\pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right]$, and it follows from (95) and Lemma 24(b) that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\lambda_{z_{0}}\right)\right)=\left[\left(x_{0}, z_{0}, c_{x_{0}}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\delta_{z_{0}} . \tag{99}
\end{equation*}
$$

Recall from Section 5.2 that $\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}}=\left[\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}\right)_{t \in I}\right]$. So in a similar manner, using Lemma 13, we obtain:

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}}\right)\right) & =\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{j}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]\right) \\
& =\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j} \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{100}
\end{align*}
$$

using Lemma 24(a) in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{j}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)\right)$ and equation (41), and

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\lambda_{x_{j}}\right)\right) & =\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\left[\left(x_{j}, z_{0}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}, t}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]\right) \\
& =\left[\left(x_{0}, z_{0}, \pi \circ \widetilde{f}_{j} \circ \widetilde{K}_{j} \circ J_{j} \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right] \tag{101}
\end{align*}
$$

using Lemma 24(b) in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{j}, z_{0}\right)\right)$. It follows from equations (96), (100) and (101) and Lemma 24 that:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{j}}\right)\right)=\left[\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0},-\widetilde{z}_{0}, \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}, c_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, c_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}  \tag{102}\\
& \left(f_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(K_{j}\right)_{\#}\left(\partial_{n_{0}}\left(\lambda_{x_{j}}\right)\right)=\left[\left(x_{0}, z_{0}, \pi \circ \widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}, t}, c_{z_{0}}\right)_{t \in I}\right]=\delta_{x_{0}} \tag{103}
\end{align*}
$$

in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)\right)$, and in $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, z_{0}\right)\right)$ respectively. Taking the image of both sides of equation (79) (resp. equation (80)) by $\left(\widetilde{f}_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(\widetilde{K}_{j}\right)_{\#}$ (resp. by $\left(f_{j}\right)_{\#} \circ\left(K_{j}\right) \#$ ), we conclude using equations (92), (97), (98) and (102) (resp. equations (93), (99) and (103)) that:

$$
\begin{align*}
& 2 \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}=m_{j} \widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}+m_{n-2} \widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}+m_{n-1} \widetilde{\delta}_{-\widetilde{z}_{0}} \text { in } \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right)\right)  \tag{104}\\
& 2 \widehat{\tau}_{n_{0}}=m_{j} \delta_{x_{0}}+m_{n-1} \delta_{z_{0}} \text { in } \pi_{1}\left(I_{n_{0}}\left(x_{0}, z_{0}\right)\right) . \tag{105}
\end{align*}
$$

Comparing equation (104) (resp. equation (105)) with Theorem 29, we see that $m_{j}=$ $m_{n-2}=1$ and $m_{n-1}=-1$ (resp. $m_{j}=m_{n-1}=1$ ). The statement of the proposition for $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. for $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ) then follows from equation (52).

The following result generalises Corollary 30.
Corollary 33. Let $n \geq n_{0}$. The boundary homomorphism $\partial_{n}: \pi_{2}\left(\prod_{1}^{n} M\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right)$ of the exact sequence (37) satisfies:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \partial_{n}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{u}\right)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\widetilde{\delta}_{u} & \text { if } u \in\left\{\widetilde{x}_{0}, \widetilde{x}_{1}, \ldots, \widetilde{x}_{n-3}, \widetilde{z}_{0}\right\} \\
\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}+\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}}+\cdots+\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}}-\widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2} & \text { if } u=-\widetilde{z}_{0}
\end{array} \text { and if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2},\right. \\
& \partial_{n}\left(\lambda_{u}\right)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
\delta_{u} & \text { if } u \in\left\{x_{0}, x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n-2}\right\} \\
\widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2}-\left(\delta_{x_{0}}+\delta_{x_{1}}+\cdots+\delta_{x_{n-2}}\right) & \text { if } u=z_{0}
\end{array} \text { and if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2},\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

the notation being that of equations (48) and (49).
Proof. If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ), a basis of $\pi_{2}\left(\Pi_{1}^{n} M\right)$ is as given in (48), and the equalities involving $\partial_{n}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{u}\right)$ (resp. $\partial_{n}\left(\lambda_{u}\right)$ ) then follow from (49) and Theorem 3.

To finish this section, we prove Proposition 4.
Proof of Proposition 4. Let $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ (resp. $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ ), and let $n \geq n_{0}$. By [GG5, equation (2) and Proposition 1(a)(i)] and exactness of (37),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\#}\right)=\operatorname{Im}\left(\left(g_{n} \circ j_{n}\right)_{\#}\right) \cong \pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right) / \operatorname{Im}\left(\partial_{n}\right), \tag{106}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\#}\right)=P_{n}\left(\mathbb{S}^{2}\right)\left(\right.$ resp. $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(\iota_{n}\right)_{\#}\right)=\Gamma_{2}\left(P_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)\right)$ ), and the given isomorphism is induced by the homomorphism $\left(g_{n} \circ j_{n}\right)_{\#}$. From Corollary 33, we have $\operatorname{Im}\left(\partial_{n}\right)=$ $\left\langle\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}} \ldots, \widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}}, \widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}, \widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2}\right\rangle\left(\operatorname{resp} . \operatorname{Im}\left(\partial_{n}\right)=\left\langle\delta_{x_{0}}, \delta_{x_{1}}, \ldots, \delta_{x_{n-2}}, \widehat{\tau}_{n}^{2}\right\rangle\right)$. Now the homomorphism $\left(\alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\right)_{\#}: \pi_{1}\left(I_{c}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right)$ is an isomorphism by Lemma 26 and Corollary 37, and since $\left(\alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\right)_{\#}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{i}}\right)=\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{x}_{i}}$ for all $0 \leq i \leq n-3$ and $\left(\alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\right)_{\#}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}\right)=\widetilde{\delta}_{\widetilde{z}_{0}}$ (resp. $\left(\alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\right)_{\#}\left(\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{i}}\right)=\delta_{x_{i}}$ for all $\left.0 \leq i \leq n-2\right)$ and $\left(\alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\right)_{\#}\left(\left[\tau_{n}\right]\right)=\widehat{\tau}_{n}$ by Lemma 26(d) and Proposition 27, we conclude that:

$$
\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right) / \operatorname{Im}\left(\partial_{n}\right) \cong \begin{cases}\pi_{1}\left(I_{c}\right) /\left\langle\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{0}_{0}}, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}}, \ldots, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-3}}, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\tilde{z}_{0}}\left[\tau_{n}^{2}\right]\right\rangle & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2}  \tag{107}\\ \pi_{1}\left(I_{c}\right) /\left\langle\widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{0}}, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{1}}, \ldots, \widetilde{\lambda}_{\widetilde{x}_{n-2}},\left[\tau_{n}^{2}\right]\right\rangle & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}\end{cases}
$$

the isomorphism being induced by $\left(\alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}\right)_{\#}$. It follows from (12) and (107) that:

$$
\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right) / \operatorname{Im}\left(\partial_{n}\right) \cong \begin{cases}P_{n-1} /\left\langle\left[\tau_{n}^{2}\right]\right\rangle & \text { if } M=\mathbb{S}^{2}  \tag{108}\\ G_{n-1} /\left\langle\left[\tau_{n}^{2}\right]\right\rangle & \text { if } M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}\end{cases}
$$

If $M=\mathbb{S}^{2}$ then from equation (51) and Figure 10, $\left[\tau_{n}\right]$ may be interpreted as the fulltwist braid $\Delta_{n-1}^{2}$ of $P_{n-1}$, and so $\pi_{1}\left(I_{n}\right) / \operatorname{Im}\left(\partial_{n}\right) \cong P_{n-1} /\left\langle\Delta_{n-1}^{4}\right\rangle \cong \mathbb{F}_{n-2} \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{n-3} \rtimes\right.$ $\left.\left(\cdots \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{3} \rtimes \mathbb{F}_{2}\right) \cdots\right)\right) \times \mathbb{Z}_{2}$ using [GG2, Proposition 8] and the Artin combing operation. We thus obtain the isomorphisms of (5). Now suppose that $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$. To interpret $\left[\tau_{n}\right] \in \pi_{1}\left(I_{c}\right)$, which is given by equation (51) in the case $M=\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, as an element of $G_{n-1}$, we modify slightly Figure 10 by replacing $n-3$ by $n-2$ and by removing the markings on $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ and $-\widetilde{z}_{0}$ in that figure. In order to obtain a geometric representation of $\left[\tau_{n}\right]$, we also suppose that each loop $\left(\widetilde{\omega}_{\widetilde{x}_{i}, t}\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)\right)_{t \in I}$ is equipped with the associated constant path $c_{\widetilde{x}_{i}}$ for $i=0,1, \ldots, n-2$ as in (51). To obtain Figure 1, but taking $n-1$ in place of $n$, we first rotate the geometric representative of $\left[\tau_{n}\right]$ by $\pi$ about the vertical axis, then we remove the points $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ and $-\widetilde{z}_{0}$, and finally we flatten down the resulting open cylinder so that $\widetilde{z}_{0}$ is the centre, as in Figure 1. We thus identify the element $v_{i}$ of Figure 1 with $\widetilde{x}_{i-1}$ for all $i=1, \ldots, n-1$. Via this construction, $\left[\tau_{n}\right]$ may be identified with the element $\Theta_{n-1}^{-1}=\rho_{n-1,0}^{-1} \cdots \rho_{1,0}^{-1}$ of $G_{n-1}$, and up to this identification, we have a surjective homomorphism $v_{n}: G_{n-1} \longrightarrow K_{n}$ induced by the map $g_{n} \circ j_{n} \circ \alpha_{n}^{\prime} \circ \alpha_{\pi} \circ \alpha_{c}: I_{c} \longrightarrow F_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$, and an isomorphism $\overline{v_{n}}: G_{n-1} /\left\langle\Theta_{n-1}^{2}\right\rangle \longrightarrow K_{n}$ that is induced by $v_{n}$. This yields the first isomorphism of (6).

Let $p: P_{n+1}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right) \longrightarrow P_{n}\left(\mathbb{R} P^{2}\right)$ be the Fadell-Neuwirth projection given geometrically by removing the penultimate string (this corresponds to forgetting the basepoint $v_{n}$, so that $z_{0}$ remains as the final basepoint). Using [GG5, Proposition 8], we obtain the following commutative diagram of short exact sequences:

where $\widehat{p}: \mathbb{Z}_{2}^{n+1} \longrightarrow \mathbb{Z}_{2}^{n}$ is the homomorphism that forgets the $n^{\text {th }}$ coordinate, from which it follows that $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left.p\right|_{K_{n+1}}\right)=\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left.\left(\iota_{n+1}\right)_{\#}\right|_{\operatorname{Ker}(p)}\right)$. On the other hand, $\operatorname{Ker}(p)$ is a free group of rank $n$ for which a basis is given by $\left\{A_{1, n}, \ldots, A_{n-1, n}, \rho_{n}\right\}$, so by the first column of (109) and [GG5, Proposition 8], $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left.p\right|_{K_{n+1}}\right)$ is a free group of rank $2 n-1$ for which a basis $\mathcal{B}$ is given by $\left\{A_{i, n}, \rho_{n} A_{i, n} \rho_{n}^{-1}, \rho_{n}^{2} \mid 1 \leq i \leq n-1\right\}$.

We now study the image under $v_{n+1}$ of the generating set $\left(\rho_{j, i}\right)_{1 \leq j \leq n, 0 \leq i \leq 2 j-2}$ of $G_{n}$ as given in Proposition 19. We take the left-hand half of Figure 1 to be a fundamental
domain for the projection $\hat{\pi}: C \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} P^{2} \backslash\left\{z_{0}\right\}$ defined in Section 3.1, and when we compose by $\alpha_{n+1}^{\prime}$, we push $z_{0}$ into the interior of the disc to obtain a model of $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ similar to that of [GG5, Figure 1], where the points $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n+1}$ of that figure should be identified with $\pi\left(v_{1}\right), \ldots, \pi\left(v_{n}\right), z_{0}$ respectively. Making use of the presentation of the pure braid groups of $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$ given in [GG3, Theorem 4] and also described in [GG5, Theorem 7], as well as the element $C_{i, j}$ defined by [GG5, equation (8)] and [GG5, relations (III) and (V), Proposition 11], we see that:

$$
v_{n+1}\left(\rho_{j, i}\right)= \begin{cases}A_{i, j} & \text { if } 1 \leq i<j  \tag{110}\\ \rho_{j} A_{1, j} \cdots A_{j-1, j} \rho_{j}=A_{j, j+1} \cdots A_{j, n+1} & \text { if } i=0 \\ \rho_{j}^{-1} C_{i-j+1, j}^{-1} \rho_{j}=\rho_{j} A_{i-j+1, j} \rho_{j}^{-1} & \text { if } j \leq i \leq 2 j-2\end{cases}
$$

Recall from Section 4 that the kernel of the homomorphism $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}: G_{n} \longrightarrow G_{n-1}$ is a free group of rank $2 n-1$ for which $\left(\rho_{n, i}\right)_{0 \leq i \leq 2 n-2}$ is a basis. Using (110), we thus obtain:

$$
\begin{equation*}
v_{n+1}\left(\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\right)\right)=\left\langle A_{i, n}, \rho_{n} A_{i, n} \rho_{n}^{-1}, A_{n-1, n} \mid 1 \leq i \leq n-1\right\rangle \tag{111}
\end{equation*}
$$

and since

$$
\rho_{n}^{-2}=A_{n, n+1}^{-1} \rho_{n} \cdot \rho_{n}^{-1} A_{n, n+1} \rho_{n}^{-1} \cdot \rho_{n}^{-1}=A_{n, n+1}^{-1} \prod_{i=1}^{n-1} \rho_{n} A_{i, n} \rho_{n}^{-1}
$$

by the surface relation (V) of [GG5, Proposition 11], it follows that $\rho_{n}^{2} \in v_{n+1}\left(\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\right)\right)$ by (111). We conclude from (111) and the form of the basis $\mathcal{B}$ of $\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left.p\right|_{K_{n+1}}\right)$ that the restriction $\left.v_{n+1}\right|_{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(q_{n}\right) \#\right)}$ is a surjective homomorphism between two free groups of the same rank, so is an isomorphism. We thus obtain the following commutative diagram of short exact sequences:

where the commutativity of the bottom right-hand square is a consequence of (110) and the definitions of $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}$ and $p$. Furthermore, since $\left\langle\Theta_{n}^{2}\right\rangle \cap \operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\right)=\{e\},\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}$ induces a homomorphism $Q_{n}: G_{n} /\left\langle\Theta_{n}^{2}\right\rangle \longrightarrow G_{n-1} /\left\langle\Theta_{n-1}^{2}\right\rangle$, which gives rise to the following commutative diagram of short exact sequences:

$$
\begin{align*}
& 1 \longrightarrow \operatorname{Ker}\left(\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}\right) \longrightarrow G_{n} /\left\langle\Theta_{n}^{2}\right\rangle \xrightarrow{Q_{n}} G_{n-1} /\left\langle\Theta_{n-1}^{2}\right\rangle \longrightarrow 1 \tag{113}
\end{align*}
$$

It follows from (113) that $\left.p\right|_{K_{n+1}}$ admits a section if and only if $Q_{n}$ does, and from (112) that $Q_{n}$ admits a section if and only if $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}$ admits a section that sends $\left\langle\Theta_{n-1}^{2}\right\rangle$ to $\left\langle\Theta_{n}^{2}\right\rangle$. Such a section for $\left(q_{n}\right)_{\#}$ is provided by the homomorphism $\left(s_{n}^{\prime}\right)_{\#}$ of Remark 21, and we deduce the second isomorphism of (6).

REMARK 34. In [GG5, Proposition (1)(a)(ii) and Theorem 3], we showed that $K_{n} \cong$ $L_{n} \times \mathbb{Z}_{2}$, where $L_{n} \cong \mathbb{F}_{2 n-3} \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{2 n-5} \rtimes\left(\cdots \rtimes\left(\mathbb{F}_{5} \rtimes \mathbb{F}_{3}\right) \cdots\right)\right)$. Due to the fact that the basepoints involved are not the same, we cannot compare $L_{n}$ directly with the corresponding factor of (6) arising from the isomorphism $\overline{v_{n}}$. Using (110) and the section of Remark 21, it should however be possible to make explicit the factors $\mathbb{F}_{2 i+1}$, where $i=1, \ldots, n-2$, as subgroups of $K_{n}$. Independently of Proposition 4, using the results of [GG5], one may show that the homomorphism $\left.p\right|_{K_{n+1}}: K_{n+1} \longrightarrow K_{n}$ splits by making use of the fact that the restriction $\left.p\right|_{L_{n+1}}: L_{n+1} \longrightarrow L_{n}$ splits.

## Appendix

As we mentioned in Remarks 14, the map $\alpha_{n}^{\prime}: I_{n}^{\prime} \longrightarrow I_{n}$ defined in Section 3.1 is a homotopy equivalence. This follows from Proposition 36 given below relating the homotopy fibres of fibre spaces and certain subspaces, and is a consequence of Lemma 35. This lemma seems to be folklore, and we were not able to find a proof in the literature, although the statement is given as an exercise in [ N , Section 3.2, Exercises(2), page 99]. We are grateful to Michael Crabb for proposing proofs of Lemma 35 and Proposition 36. In this section, we will denote the homotopy fibre of a map $f: X \longrightarrow Y$ by $I(f)$ rather than $I_{f}$.

We first fix some notation and recall the homotopy fibres that we will analyse. Let $f: X \longrightarrow Y$ and $g: Y \longrightarrow Z$ be pointed maps. By (2), we have:

$$
\begin{aligned}
I(f) & =\left\{(x, \rho) \in X \times Y^{I} \mid \rho(0)=f(x), \rho(1)=*_{\gamma}\right\}, \\
I(g) & =\left\{(y, \gamma) \in Y \times Z^{I} \mid \gamma(0)=g(y), \gamma(1)=*_{Z}\right\} \text { and } \\
I(g \circ f) & =\left\{(x, \gamma) \in X \times Z^{I} \mid \gamma(0)=g(f(x)), \gamma(1)=*_{Z}\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $f_{*}: I(g \circ f) \longrightarrow I(g)$ be the map defined by $f_{*}(x, \gamma)=(f(x), \gamma)$. Then:

$$
I\left(f_{*}\right)=\left\{(x, \gamma, \Phi) \in X \times Z^{I} \times I(g)^{I} \mid \Phi(0)=f_{*}(x, \gamma), \Phi(1)=*_{I(g)}\right\}
$$

If $\Phi: I \longrightarrow I(g)$ belongs to $I(g)^{I}$ then there exists $(\rho, \Gamma) \in\left(Y \times Z^{I}\right)^{I}$ such that for all $s \in I, \Phi(s)=(\rho(s), \Gamma(s, \cdot)) \in I(g), \Gamma(s, 0)=g(\rho(s))$ and $\Gamma(s, 1)=*_{Z}$ for all $s \in I$. Hence:

$$
\begin{aligned}
I\left(f_{*}\right)= & \left\{(x, \gamma, \rho, \Gamma) \in X \times Z^{I} \times\left(Y \times Z^{I}\right)^{I} \mid \gamma(0)=g(f(x)), \gamma(1)=*_{\mathrm{Z}}\right. \\
& \Gamma(s, 0)=g(\rho(s)) \text { and } \Gamma(s, 1)=*_{\mathrm{Z}} \text { for all } s \in I \\
& \left.(f(x), \gamma)=(\rho(0), \Gamma(0, \cdot)),(\rho(1), \Gamma(1, \cdot))=\left(*_{Y}, c_{*_{Z}}\right)\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore $\gamma(t)=\Gamma(0, t)$ for all $t \in I$, and thus $\gamma(1)=\Gamma(0,1)=*_{Z}$ and $\gamma(0)=\Gamma(0,0)=$ $g(\rho(0))=g(f(x))$, which implies that two of the defining conditions of $I\left(f_{*}\right)$ may be removed, and $\gamma$ is redundant. Hence we may identify $I\left(f_{*}\right)$ with the set:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\{(x, \rho, \Gamma) \in X \times\left(Y \times Z^{I}\right)^{I} \mid f(x)=\rho(0), \rho(1)=*_{Y}, \Gamma(1, t)=*_{Z} \text { for all } t \in I\right. \\
& \left.\Gamma(s, 0)=g(\rho(s)) \text { and } \Gamma(s, 1)=*_{Z} \text { for all } s \in I\right\} \tag{114}
\end{align*}
$$

LEMMA 35. Let $f: X \longrightarrow Y$ and $g: Y \longrightarrow Z$ be pointed maps, and let $f_{*}: I(g \circ f) \longrightarrow I(g)$ be the map induced by $f$ on the level of homotopy fibres. Then $I\left(f_{*}\right)$ is homotopy equivalent to $I(f)$.

Proof. With the identification of $I\left(f_{*}\right)$ with the set given in (114), let $\psi: I\left(f_{*}\right) \longrightarrow I(f)$ be defined by $\psi(x, \rho, \Gamma)=(x, \rho)$ and $\varphi: I(f) \longrightarrow I\left(f_{*}\right)$ by $\varphi(x, \rho)=\left(x, \rho, \Gamma^{\prime}\right)$, where $\Gamma^{\prime}(s, t)=g(\rho(\max (s, t)))$ for all $s, t \in I$. Note that $\varphi$ is well defined since $f(x)=\rho(0)$, $\rho(1)=*_{\gamma}, \Gamma^{\prime}(s, 0)=g(\rho(s))$ and $\Gamma^{\prime}(s, 1)=\Gamma^{\prime}(1, t)=g(\rho(1))=*_{Z}$ for all $s, t \in I$. Clearly $\psi \circ \varphi=\operatorname{Id}_{I(f)}$. It thus remains to prove that $\varphi \circ \psi \simeq \operatorname{Id}_{I\left(f_{*}\right)}$, or equivalently, that there exists a homotopy in $I\left(f_{*}\right)$ that takes $(x, \rho, \Gamma)$ to $\left(x, \rho, \Gamma^{\prime}\right)$, where $\Gamma^{\prime}$ is as defined above. It is clear that there exists a homotopy $H_{u}: I \times I \longrightarrow I \times I$, where $u \in I$, for which $H_{0}$ is the identity, $H_{1}(s, t) \in I \times\{0\}, H_{u}(s, 0)=(s, 0)$, and $H_{u}(A) \subset A$ for all $u, s, t \in I$, where $A=I \times\{0\} \cup\{0\} \times I$. For example, we may take:

$$
H_{u}(s, t)= \begin{cases}((1-2 u) s+2 u \max (s, t), t) & \text { if } 0 \leq u \leq \frac{1}{2} \\ (\max (s, t), 2(1-u) t) & \text { if } \frac{1}{2}<u \leq 1\end{cases}
$$

Let $u, s, t \in I$. Since $H_{\frac{1}{2}}(s, t)=(\max (s, t), t)$ and $H_{\frac{1}{2}}(0, t)=(t, t)$, we see that $H_{u}$ is continuous. For $u, s, t \in I$, let $\Gamma_{u}(s, t)=\Gamma\left(H_{u}(s, t)\right)$. Then $\Gamma_{0}=\Gamma, \Gamma(t, 0)=g(\rho(t))$, and $\Gamma_{1}(s, t)=\Gamma(\max (s, t), 0)=g(\rho(\max (s, t)))=\Gamma^{\prime}(s, t)$, so $\Gamma_{1}=\Gamma^{\prime}$. It remains to show that $\left(x, \rho, \Gamma_{u}\right) \in I\left(f_{*}\right)$ for all $u \in I$. This is the case, since $f(x)=\rho(0), \rho(1)=*_{\gamma}$, $\Gamma_{u}(s, 0)=\Gamma\left(H_{u}(s, 0)\right)=\Gamma(s, 0)=g(\rho(s)), \Gamma_{u}(s, 1)=\Gamma\left(H_{u}(s, 1)\right)=*_{Z}$ and $\Gamma_{u}(1, t)=$ $\Gamma\left(H_{u}(1, t)\right)=*_{Z}$ using the properties of $H_{u}$ given above. It follows that $\varphi \circ \psi \simeq \operatorname{Id}_{I\left(f_{*}\right)}$, which proves the result.

Proposition 36. Let $p: E \longrightarrow B$ be a fibration, and let $E_{0}$ be a subspace of $E$ such that the restriction $p_{0}=\left.p\right|_{E_{0}}: E_{0} \longrightarrow B$ is also a fibration. Let $F$ (resp. $F_{0}$ ) denote the fibre of $p$ (resp. $p_{0}$ ) over a base point in $B$, let $\iota: E_{0} \longrightarrow E, \iota_{0}: F_{0} \longrightarrow F, j: F \longrightarrow E$, and $j_{0}: F_{0} \longrightarrow E_{0}$ denote the respective inclusions, where $\iota_{0}=\left.\iota\right|_{F_{0}}$, and let $\alpha^{\prime}: I\left(\iota_{0}\right) \longrightarrow I(\iota)$ be the map defined by $\alpha^{\prime}(x, \gamma)=\left(j_{0}(x), j \circ \gamma\right)$ for all $(x, \gamma) \in I\left(\iota_{0}\right)$. Then $\alpha^{\prime}$ is a homotopy equivalence between $I\left(\iota_{0}\right)$ and $I(\iota)$.

Proof. First note that we have the following commutative diagram:


Let $x_{0} \in F_{0}$ be a basepoint that we propagate to $F, E_{0}, E$ and $B$ using this diagram. In particular, let $b_{0}=p_{0} \circ j_{0}\left(x_{0}\right)$ be the basepoint of $B$. The map $\alpha^{\prime}: I\left(\iota_{0}\right) \longrightarrow I(\iota)$ defined in the statement is well defined, since if $(x, \gamma) \in I\left(\iota_{0}\right)$ then $\iota_{0}(x)=\gamma_{0}$ and $\gamma(1)=\iota_{0}\left(x_{0}\right)$, so $\alpha^{\prime}(x, \gamma)=\left(j_{0}(x), j \circ \gamma\right) \in E_{0} \times E^{I}$, and we have $j \circ \gamma(0)=j \circ \iota_{0}(x)=\iota\left(j_{0}(x)\right)$, and $j \circ \gamma(1)=j \circ \iota_{0}\left(x_{0}\right)=\iota\left(j_{0}\left(x_{0}\right)\right)$, which is the basepoint of $E$.

Taking $X=E_{0}, Y=E, Z=B, f=\iota$ and $g=p$ in the statement and proof of Lemma 35, and noting that $p_{0}=p \circ \iota$, we obtain a map $\iota_{*}: I\left(p_{0}\right) \longrightarrow I(p)$, and the $\operatorname{map} \psi: I\left(\iota_{*}\right) \longrightarrow I(\iota)$ defined in the first line of the proof of Lemma 35 is a homotopy equivalence. We will exhibit a homotopy equivalence $h: I\left(\iota_{0}\right) \longrightarrow I\left(\iota_{*}\right)$ for which $\alpha^{\prime}=$ $\psi \circ h$, which will prove the result. Since $p$ and $p_{0}$ are fibrations, the maps $g: F \longrightarrow I(p)$ and $g_{0}: F_{0} \longrightarrow I\left(p_{0}\right)$ defined by $g(x)=\left(j(x), c_{b_{0}}\right)$ for all $x \in F$ and $g_{0}(y)=\left(j_{0}(y), c_{b_{0}}\right)$ for all $y \in F_{0}$ are homotopy equivalences [A, Proposition 3.5.10 and Remark 3.5.11]. Consider the following diagram:


Using the commutativity of (115), it is straightforward to check that the right-hand square is commutative, and we thus obtain an induced map $h: I\left(\iota_{0}\right) \longrightarrow I\left(\iota_{*}\right)$ defined by $h(x, \gamma)=\left(g_{0}(x), g \circ \gamma\right)$ for all $(x, \gamma) \in I\left(\iota_{0}\right)$ that is a homotopy equivalence because $g$ and $g_{0}$ are homotopy equivalences. If $c^{\prime}: I \longrightarrow B^{I}$ is the path defined by $c^{\prime}(t)=c_{b_{0}}$ for all $t \in I$, then using the definition of $\psi$, for all $(x, \gamma) \in I\left(\iota_{0}\right)$, we have:

$$
\psi \circ h(x, \gamma)=\psi\left(g_{0}(x), g \circ \gamma\right)=\psi\left(\left(j_{0}(x), c_{b_{0}}\right),\left(j \circ \gamma, c^{\prime}\right)\right)=\left(j_{0}(x), j \circ \gamma\right)=\alpha^{\prime}(x, \gamma)
$$

So $\alpha^{\prime}=\psi \circ h$, and hence $\alpha^{\prime}$ is a homotopy equivalence as required.
We end this paper with two corollaries of Proposition 36.
Corollary 37. The map $\alpha_{n}^{\prime}: I_{n}^{\prime} \longrightarrow I_{n}$ defined in Section 3.1 is a homotopy equivalence.
Proof. It suffices to take the first two rows (resp. the fibrations $p_{0}$ and $p$ ) of (115) to be the bottom two rows (the fibrations $p_{n}$ and $\widetilde{p}_{n}$ of Section 2) of (15), and to apply Proposition 36.

Corollary 38. For all $k \geq 1$, the inclusion $j: F \longrightarrow E$ and its restriction $\left.j\right|_{F_{0}}: F_{0} \longrightarrow E_{0}$ induce an isomorphism $j_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F, F_{0}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(E, E_{0}\right)$.

Proof. Recall from [A, Definition 4.5.3] and the paragraph that precedes it that the relative homotopy group $\pi_{k}\left(E, E_{0}\right)$ (resp. $\left.\pi_{k}\left(F, F_{0}\right)\right)$ is the homotopy group $\pi_{k-1}(I(\iota))$ (resp. $\pi_{k-1}\left(I\left(\iota_{0}\right)\right)$ ) of the homotopy fibre of $\iota$ (resp. $\left.\iota_{0}\right)$ for all $k \geq 1$. So for all $k \geq 2$, the map of pairs $j:\left(F, F_{0}\right) \longrightarrow\left(E, E_{0}\right)$ induces a homomorphism $j_{\# k}: \pi_{k}\left(F, F_{0}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k}\left(E, E_{0}\right)$ that coincides with the isomorphism $\alpha_{\#(k-1)}^{\prime}: \pi_{k-1}\left(I\left(\iota_{0}\right)\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{k-1}(I(\iota))$ given by Proposition 36 (observe that if $k=1$ then as in [A, Definition 4.5.3], we refer to the map $j_{\# 1}: \pi_{1}\left(F, F_{0}\right) \longrightarrow \pi_{1}\left(E, E_{0}\right)$ as a homomorphism, and we know that it is also a bijection).

## References

[A] M. Arkowitz, Introduction to homotopy theory, Universitext, Springer, New York, 2011.
[Bi] J. S. Birman, On braid groups, Comm. Pure and Appl. Math. 22 (1969), 41-72.
[BCP] C.-F. Bödigheimer, F. R. Cohen and M. D. Peim, Mapping class groups and function spaces, Homotopy methods in algebraic topology (Boulder, CO, 1999), Contemp. Math. 271, 17-39, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI, 2001.
[CX] F. R. Cohen and M. A. Xicoténcatl, On orbit configuration spaces associated to the Gaussian integers: homotopy and homology groups, in Arrangements in Boston: a Conference on Hyperplane Arrangements (1999), Topol. Appl. 118 (2002), 17-29.
[DG] A. Dold and D. L. Gonçalves, Self-coincidence of fibre maps, Osaka J. Math. 42 (2005), 291-307.
[Fa] E. Fadell, Homotopy groups of configuration spaces and the string problem of Dirac, Duke Math. J. 29 (1962), 231-242.
[FaN] E. Fadell and L. Neuwirth, Configuration spaces, Math. Scand. 10 (1962), 111-118.
[FVB] E. Fadell and J. Van Buskirk, The braid groups of $\mathbb{E}^{2}$ and $\mathbb{S}^{2}$, Duke Math. J. 29 (1962), 243-257.
[FZ] E. M. Feichtner and G. M. Ziegler, The integral cohomology algebras of ordered configuration spaces of spheres, Doc. Math. 5 (2000), 115-139.
[FoN] R. H. Fox and L. Neuwirth, The braid groups, Math. Scand. 10 (1962), 119-126.
[GGG] M. Golasiński, D. L. Gonçalves and J. Guaschi, On the homotopy fibre of the inclusion $\operatorname{map} F_{n}(X) \longleftrightarrow \prod_{1}^{n} X$ for some orbit spaces X, Bol. Soc. Mat. Mex. 23 (2017), 457-485.
[Go] C. H. Goldberg, An exact sequence of braid groups, Math. Scand. 33 (1973), 69-82.
[GG1] D. L. Gonçalves and J. Guaschi, On the structure of surface pure braid groups, J. Pure Appl. Algebra 182 (2003), 33-64 (due to a printer's error, this article was republished in its entirety with the reference 186 (2004), 187-218).
[GG2] D. L. Gonçalves and J. Guaschi, The roots of the full twist for surface braid groups, Math. Proc. Camb. Phil. Soc. 137 (2004), 307-320.
[GG3] D. L. Gonçalves and J. Guaschi, The braid groups of the projective plane, Algebr. Geom. Topol. 4 (2004), 757-780.
[GG4] D. L. Gonçalves and J. Guaschi, Surface braid groups and coverings, J. London Math. Soc. 85 (2012), 855-868.
[GG5] D. L. Gonçalves and J. Guaschi, Inclusion of configuration spaces in Cartesian products, and the virtual cohomological dimension of the braid groups of $\mathbb{S}^{2}$ and $\mathbb{R} P^{2}$, Pac. J. Math. 287 (2017), 71-99.
[GG6] D. L. Gonçalves and J. Guaschi, A survey of the homotopy properties of inclusion of certain types of configuration spaces into the Cartesian product, preprint, March 2016, Chinese Ann. Math., to appear.
[Ha] A. Hatcher, Algebraic topology, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2002.
[Ho] H. Hopf, Über die Abbildungen der dreidimensionalen Sphäre auf die Kugelfläche, Math. Ann. 104 (1931), 637-665.
[J] D. L. Johnson, Presentations of groups, London Mathematical Society Student Texts 15, 2nd edition, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1997.
[K] U. Koschorke, Minimizing coincidence numbers of maps into projective spaces, Geom. Topol. Monogr. 14 (2008), 373-391.
[M] M. Mather, Pull-backs in homotopy theory, Canad. J. Math., Vol. XXVIII, No. 2, 1976, 225-263.
[N] J. Neisendorfer, Algebraic methods in unstable homotopy theory, New Mathematical Monographs 12, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 2010.
[VB] J. Van Buskirk, Braid groups of compact 2-manifolds with elements of finite order, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 122 (1966), 81-97.
[W] G. W. Whitehead, Elements of homotopy theory, Graduate Texts in Mathematics 61, Springer-Verlag, New York, 1978.


[^0]:    2010 AMS Subject Classification: 20F36 (primary); 55P15 Classification of homotopy type; 55Q40 Homotopy groups of spheres; 55R80 Discriminantal varieties, configuration spaces; 55R05 Fiber spaces

